

**D S**

916

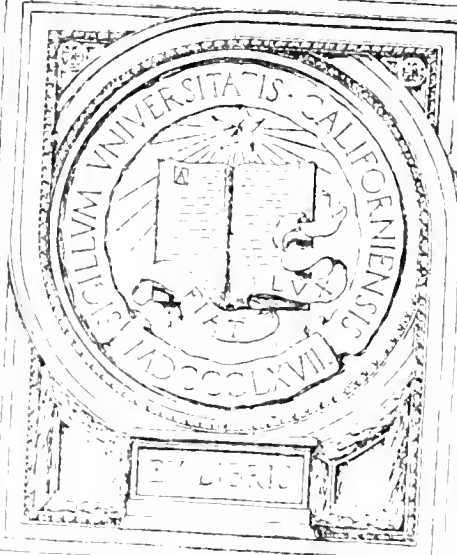
J3

UC-NRLF



B 4 506 700

GIFT OF



EX LIBRIS

GIFT  
APR 1 1913

THE  
**KOREAN CONSPIRACY TRIAL.**

---

**FULL REPORT OF THE PROCEEDINGS**

BY THE

**SPECIAL CORRESPONDENT OF THE  
"JAPAN CHRONICLE,"**

---

**Price . . . . One Yen.**

---

**PRINTED AND PUBLISHED AT THE OFFICE OF THE "JAPAN CHRONICLE,"**

**KORE, JAPAN:**

**1912.**

# **THE "JAPAN CHRONICLE."**

---

**DAILY AND WEEKLY EDITIONS.**

---

**Largest Circulation of any Foreign Newspaper  
in Japan.**

---

**Reliable Political, Financial, Commercial,  
and General News.**

---

**BEST ADVERTISING MEDIUM.**

---

Specimen Copies, Advertising Rates, etc., sent on Application  
to the Manager.

**"JAPAN CHRONICLE," KOBE, JAPAN.**



THE  
**KOREAN CONSPIRACY TRIAL.**

---

FULL REPORT OF THE PROCEEDINGS

BY THE

SPECIAL CORRESPONDENT OF THE

**"JAPAN CHRONICLE."**

11

---

**Price - - - - One Yen.**

---

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED AT THE OFFICE OF THE "JAPAN CHRONICLE,"

KOBE, JAPAN:

1912.

2016

51

2016  
2016

# The Korean Conspiracy Trial.

By the Special Correspondent of the "Japan Chronicle."

## FIRST DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### INDIRECT ACCUSATIONS AGAINST FOREIGNERS.

SEOUL, June 28.

To-day the long-expected trial of the 123 Koreans charged with being concerned in a conspiracy to assassinate Count Terauchi, Governor-General of Korea, was commenced, and will be continued day by day until the conclusion of the proceedings.

#### THE ARRIVAL OF THE PRISONERS.

It was about seven o'clock this morning that small groups of prisoners began to arrive at the Court, each group of about ten men being escorted by three or four warders. The prisoners were manacled, and were tied together by a long cord. It was more than an hour before all the prisoners and their escorts had arrived and passed into the Court, which was strongly guarded by police and gendarmes. Several policemen stood at the entrance-gates, and the prisoners passed through a double row of police on their way from the gates to the Court. In front of the entrance there was a big crowd of Koreans waiting patiently to see their fellow-countrymen about to be tried on a most serious charge. The excitement and confusion among these spectators was considerable, and mounted police and gendarmes were kept busy in their efforts to prevent the curious crowd from swarming round the entrance to the Court. As soon as the prisoners began to arrive, the spectators were

driven back as far as possible from the gates, and eventually were kept at a distance of about 200 yards from the entrance, after a good deal of hustling and pushing. There was also considerable confusion at the entrance among those Koreans who had obtained permits to enter the Court. Each was anxious to get in before his neighbour, and the police had their work cut out to maintain order. Only about 200 persons were admitted, and when a party of about 20 women, relatives of some of the accused, came up to the gates at 8.10 they were refused admittance, but some of them were afterwards allowed to enter. All those Koreans who gained admittance by ticket were searched one after another at an inner gate before being allowed to enter the Court. About 20 foreigners, including three members of the Salvation Army, were among those admitted to the Court.

#### THE SCENE IN COURT.

A special building had been erected behind the District Court for the hearing of this case. It was about 84 feet long, and 30 feet wide, and covered about 70 tsubo. The cost of building this Court, it was told, was about ¥7,000. When the public was admitted the accused were seen sitting in the middle of the Court, divided into two groups of 67 and 53 men. On either side were the seats for counsel and the Press. At one end were the Judges' seats, and right at the other extreme end of the Court were the seats provided for the public. A barrier was erected across the Court between the

Judges and the accused, and another barrier separated the prisoners from the public sitting behind them. About 30 policemen and half-a-dozen gendarmes guarded the prisoners, while a number of police and gendarmerie were scattered among the spectators at the back of the Court. During the proceedings the Court was guarded outside by police and gendarmerie.

On entering the Court it was noticed, now that the straw hats worn by the prisoners had been removed, that the hair of each man had been closely cropped, as is done with prisoners in Japan. Four of the accused, who are already serving sentences for other offences, wore the usual red convict garb.

#### LENGTHY PRELIMINARIES.

About an hour after the public had been admitted the Judges took their seats, shortly after nine o'clock. Judge Tsukahara presided, with two Associate Judges. There were two interpreters, one of whom was a Korean. Instead of taking their places near the persons whose evidence is to be interpreted, as is done in Japanese Courts, the interpreters sat near the Judges. Big piles of documents were placed on the table in front of the Judges, together with two boxes and an old-fashioned long sword. An array of 16 barristers—nine Japanese and seven Koreans—appeared for the defence; among the Japanese counsel was Mr. Ogawa Heikichi, of Tokyo.

The whole of the morning's proceedings was taken up by preliminaries. The accused answered one by one to their names, and gave their ages, residences, profession, etc. All this information had to be interpreted, and occupied nearly two and a half hours. Then the Chief Procurator, Mr. Matsudera, read the indictment, which took 50 minutes to recte, and about the same time to interpret. The outline of this indictment has already appeared in the *Chronicle* (June 13th) and need not now be given. Upon

the conclusion of the interpretation of the indictment, the Court adjourned for tiffin.

#### EXAMINATION OF ACCUSED.

On the Court reassembling at 2.30, the trial proper commenced. The first man to be examined was Sin Hyo-pyom, aged 32, who said he was formerly a corporal in the Korean Army, and afterwards became gymnastic instructor at the Shia Seung Academy. He denied having joined the Sin Min Hoi (New People's Society), the object of which was to restore the independence of Korea and to kill the Governor-General and others. He denied having ever heard of the organisation, nor had he heard that Baron Yun was at the head of the Society. Accused also denied having been urged to join by Kim Heung-yang in Mr. McCune's room (the principal of the mission school at Syen Chuen). He joined the academy as instructor in September 1903, but had never heard from anyone that, whenever called upon, he must turn out to assassinate the Governor-General. Questioned as to why he had admitted these allegations before the Procurator, accused said he did so simply because of the torture to which he had been subjected by the authorities. The Court asked how a man in the position of a teacher could have said what he did not mean, no matter what torture he might have been subjected to. Accused replied that he could not hold out any longer, and had to say things against his will. He had never been visited by any of those regarded as ringleaders in the alleged conspiracy, nor had he ever taken part in discussions with anyone in regard to carrying out the alleged plot. He had not mentioned any such scheme to Mr. McCune, the head of the mission school, or anyone else. He was not aware that a party of conspirators, armed with 80 revolvers, had gone to the railway station at Syen Chuen in October (old calendar), but had

been unable to ascertain the actual date and time of the Governor-General's arrival. Neither did he know whether Mr. McCune had cautioned the conspirators to be more careful regarding their movements, as otherwise their plans would be detected. Accused denied having gone to a wealthy widow at Kwak San to obtain money to carry out the plot. Statements to the above effect which he had made were due, accused now said, to the torture to which he was subjected by the police.

#### FOREIGNERS AND ASSASSINATION.

In answer to further questions by the Court, accused denied having consulted two members of the New People's Society from Pyong-yang in regard to the contemplated assassination at Syen Chuen. He denied that one of these men, Ok Kwan-pin, had told him and others that Count Terauchi was passing shortly, nor had he been told by anyone of the necessity for getting revolvers in readiness to execute the plans which were made. He did not know that some representative men from Wiju had met men from Pyong-yang and other places, and after discussing the conspiracy had appointed certain men to buy more revolvers. He was not aware that after preparations had been made at Syen Chuen Ok went up to Wiju, and on returning to Syen Chuen had met a number of conspirators in the mission school, where Ok addressed a remark to the students suggesting the assassination of the Governor-General. He did not know whether a further meeting took place at the academy, attended by about six foreigners, to talk over the assassination, neither did he know whether some of the conspirators had requested Mr. McCune to instigate the students at his school to take part in the plot. Neither did he know whether Mr. McCune had assembled the students, teachers, and some local members of the New People's Society and had suggested to them that they should join the con-

spiracy, quoting in support of the suggestion a passage from the Old Testament which showed that even a weak man could get the advantage of his superior.

By the Court: Later on about 30 men, including An Tai-kuk and one other, came from Pyong-yang to Syen Chuen and called a meeting that night at the mission school. An announced that the Governor-General was coming the following day, and they must get ready to carry out their plan against him. About 50 boys were also selected, whom the leaders instructed that when the Governor-General's train was heard coming they should get ready by laying hold of their revolvers, which should be concealed under their clothes. Then those who had the best opportunity should fire at the Governor-General. Is that so?

Accused: I do not know.

By the Court: The following morning (the 28th of same month) revolvers were distributed among the students of the mission school in the presence of the principal, Mr. McCune. The men and the boys then proceeded to Syen Chuen station, but the Governor-General's train passed through without stopping. Is that so?

Accused: I do not know.

By the Court: A great meeting was held that evening, when Yi Seung-hun, another one of the accused, said that although they had missed their object that day, they would find it next day at the station when he alighted. This was an order from Yun Chi-ho and Yang Ki-tak from the head office of New People's Society at Seoul, and which represented 13 provinces of Korea. Mr. McCune then told them there might be some one among them who did not know the Count, so they should watch to see whom he (Mr. McCune) shook hands with, and fire at him. Is that so?

Accused: I do not know.

By the Court: Did the conspirators give revolvers to the students and the

men in the presence of Mr. McCune, and proceed to that station under your command?

Accused: We went to the station, but there was little possibility of anyone carrying weapons, since we had been first subjected to a search.

#### THE SCENE AT THE RAILWAY-STATION.

Accused further said that he lined up the men and boys on the platform in double file, at the top of which was Mr. McCune and other teachers. There were also a number of Japanese. The Governor-General's train arrived at the station at about noon from Wiju. He alighted from his car and walked along the lines of the men and boys, saluting as he passed. He then went up to Mr. McCune, the principal of the school, but accused did not know whether the Count shook hands with him or not. The Count then walked back along the lines to his car, passing at a distance of five or six paces. The train then started for Hyongyang. It was impossible for him or his companions to carry revolvers, as the examination of their persons was strictly carried out. Accused did not know whether in the evening, the men and boys assembled at the mission school, with feelings of great regret in the minds of every one, nor did he hear Mr. McCune say that the Korean had very little courage.

Accused was not aware that meetings were also held at the school on the two following days, at the last of which Yi Saung-hun, one of the accused, expressed his regret at the failure of their plans, but urged his fellows to make themselves happy by pretending that things had turned out as they had expected.

#### ALLEGATIONS OF TORTURE.

By the Court: All the questions asked were based upon your statements before the police and the Procurator at the preliminary examination. Why do you now deny your own statements?

Accused: At the police office I said so on account of the hard treatment, and the reason I said "yes" at the Procurator's Office was that they told me if I should say "no" I would be carried again down to the police office and be teased (*i.e.* tortured) again.

By the Court: It is an extraordinary thing that all these statements are now disavowed; it cannot be on account of the force alleged to have been applied by the authorities in taking the original statements. Was it not because you wanted to join the New People's Society that you joined the mission school?

Accused: The statements originally made were obtained as the result of force used upon me and others by the authorities. I only went to the mission school to teach gymnastics.

Pointing to a large box, the Court asked accused whether he knew it had been kept at the mission school, and had contained revolvers.

Accused replied that he knew nothing about the box. This closed the examination of the first accused.

The next prisoner to be examined was Yi Pong-cho, aged 38, who said he had no connection with the New People's Society, nor did he know the objects of the body. He did not know whether Baron Yun Chih-bo and Yang Kitak were the leaders of the movement, nor did he know the local representative of the Society at Syen Chuen. He knew nothing of the alleged meetings in the mission school to discuss the assassination of the Governor-General and other high officials. He had no knowledge of the members of the Society purchasing revolvers, nor did he know of their failure to discover what time the Governor-General was to arrive at the railway-station. He denied having given Y100 towards the fund for buying revolvers. He did not know whether two men from Hyongyang had delivered inflammatory speeches at Syen Chuen, nor did he know whether foreigners (Mr. Mc-

Cune and two others) had taken part in the discussion of the plot. He was not aware that about ¥4,000 had been collected from members of the New People's Society, and that a large number of revolvers had been bought, and denied having given three or four revolvers to be put with the others.

Questioned by the Court as to why he had admitted these statements to the police, accused said he had been forced to do so by the authorities.

#### DAVID AND GOLIATH.

In reply to further questions, accused said that he had never heard that the conspirators, being of opinion that the mission school students should be included in the plot, had asked Mr. McCune, the principal of the school, to do what he could to help the cause, and that Mr. McCune had assembled the students and related the story of David and Goliath as an example of what could be done by strength of resolution. Accused had no knowledge of a meeting of conspirators at Syen Chuen to discuss plans, the selection of 50 strong boys from the school and their being armed with revolvers. A series of questions similar to those put to the other accused, relating to what was alleged to have happened at the railway-station when Count Terauchi left the train, were put, and were all answered negatively by accused, who said he had admitted these statements to the police under pressure, and it was because he wanted to save his life that he also admitted these statements to the Procurator at the preliminary examination.

Mr. Miyake, one of the counsel for the defence, made an application to further investigate this point, but it was not allowed, the Court announcing that a more opportune time would present itself later.

The next prisoner to be examined was No Hio-Wook, aged 35, a rice-dealer. He denied knowing anything of the New

People's Society or its members. He had never been urged by anyone to assassinate the Governor-General, nor was he present at a meeting of members of the Society at Syen Chuen to discuss the method of assassinating the Governor-General. Yang Ki-tak was a stranger to accused. He had not given ¥100 to the funds of the New People's Society, and knew nothing of the Society's scheme for collecting money. He was not at the railway-station when the arrangements were alleged to have been made to attack the Governor-General. He did not know whether Kim Il-Chom one of the accused, went to Port Arthur early in 1909 to meet the man who was under arrest for the assassination of Prince Ito. He knew nothing of Kim being instructed to buy revolvers at Mukden, nor did he go to Syen Chuen station with 50 other men, all armed with revolvers. A number of questions similar to those put to the other prisoners were asked by the Court, including one as to whether accused knew that Mr. McCune had instigated the students at the mission school to join the alleged conspiracy by delivering inflammatory speeches. Prisoner denied all knowledge of the alleged facts.

The Court asked why it was that accused had admitted the truth of all these statements to the police and to the Procurators, and now flatly denied them.

Accused, in reply said that the police office he could not help saying "yes," "yes," owing to the severe torture when the questions were put to him.

The next prisoner to be examined, Kim Chang-whan, aged 31, in reply to the Court, admitted having heard of the New People's Society, but denied being advised to join it by Yang Chom-miung. Accused said he had not been appointed by the Society to collect money and revolvers. He did not know of the members of the Society going to Syen Chuen to assassinate the Governor-General, and of their being misled owing to a wrong report regarding his Excellency's arrival. He had



not heard of two men afterwards going to Syen Chuen with the correct information as to the Governor-General's arrival, which information had been obtained by Baron Yun from an official in the Government-General. Questioned as to the alleged assembling of the conspirators at the mission school, and of Ok urging his hearers to emulate An, the assassin of Prince Ito, accused said he knew nothing of the incident, nor had he heard Mr. McCune tell the conspirators to shoot at the officer with whom he would shake hands at Syen Chuen. Accused did not know whether 50 students from the mission school were given revolvers before proceeding to the railway station to meet the Governor-General.

On the prisoner being asked by the Court why he had admitted all these facts when questioned by the police and by the Procurators, he made the same reply as the other accused—that he had been forced to make a confession on these lines.

It was now 5.30 p.m., and the Court announced that the proceedings would be adjourned till the following day. So ended the first day's hearing of this remarkable case. The prisoners were again manacled, and attached to each other by cords, and were led out of Court back to prison in the way that they had been brought down in the morning. All Korean passers-by were kept a good distance off as the prisoners were taken along. During the proceedings in Court the accused had sat very quietly, and perfect order was maintained. Some of them looked rather tired and dejected, due to some extent to the intense heat and stuffiness of the Court. There were windows in the building, but these were not allowed to be widely opened at the bottom, with the result that the atmosphere of the Court was most oppressive, and it was extremely exhausting for all concerned to sit for the whole day in such a hot and close building.

## SECOND DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### THE EXAMINATION OF BARON YUN.

SEOUL, June 30.

Yesterday was the second day of the trial, and the proceedings relating to the admission of the public and so on were just the same as on the previous day. As before all the Koreans were searched before being admitted to the Court, and the place was again closely guarded by a force of police and gendarmes. The prisoners were brought to the Court manacled, as described in my previous letter, but their guards seemed to me to be rather less strict to-day, probably owing to the quiet demeanour shown by the prisoners yesterday, and the unlikelihood of any trouble or disturbance being caused by them.

The main feature of to-day's proceedings was the examination of Baron Yun, whose pale face and slight figure, combined with his refined and dignified manner, made a favourable impression upon those at least who were disposed to give him a hearing before judging him. He replied to the questions of the Court in fluent Japanese, spoken with an accent and in a style obviously well-bred.

In reply to questions by the Court, Baron Yun said he studied Japanese in Japan from 1881 to 1883, studied Chinese in Shanghai, and English in America. He was of the Christian faith. He returned to Korea about 1899, and was engaged in the Government service as secretary to the Privy Council, and was also subsequently appointed Prefect of Chinampo and later of Gensan. He afterwards went to Russia, and on his return to Korea entered the Foreign Department at Seoul about 1905. He was appointed Vice-Minister of Foreign Affairs at the commencement of the Russo-Japanese War, and retained this post until Japan declared a Protectorate over Korea. For about six months he was out of office, and was then appointed

Director of the Hanyong Suhwan Mission School at Kaisong—a school founded and maintained by the Methodist Church.

By the Court: What were your feelings when you were compelled to retire from the Foreign Department?

Accused: I was overwhelmed with grief to think of the subversion of my country.

Did you not think of plans for recovering Korean national rights?—I knew that it was impossible to do so. It appeared to me that the restoration of the crushed national dignity of the country was an absolute impossibility for the Korean people.

In reply to further questions, Baron Yun said he once occupied the post of sub-director of a flour milling company, but the position was an honorary one. Later on he entered a school at Kaisong as a teacher; he had many friends connected with Christian churches. He had known Yang Ki-tak, formerly of the *Dai Han Mai-il Shinpo*, of Seoul, for more than ten years, and he also knew An Tai-kuk, of Seoul, whom he met for the first time at the Taisong School, of which institution he was the honorary director. This school was opened about five years ago. Neither Yang Ki-tak nor An Tai-kuk were intimate acquaintances of his. He also knew Yi Seung-hun, by whom accused had first been consulted about the formation of the Young Men's Association, the forerunner of the New People's Society. Yi explained that the Young Men's Association would not make any discrimination regarding the religion of its members, and was to be established as a rival concern to the Y.M.C.A. Yi also told accused that the object of this Young Men's Association was to inculcate patriotic ideas in the minds of young Koreans, and to improve their moral conduct. A magazine was published by the Association in which the biographies of the world's greatest men were printed.

By the Court: Had this Association no other object beyond those you have stat-

ed?—No; and no other object has since been added, nor has any change been made in the objects of the Association. About a year later the Taisong School amalgamated with the New People's Society, the objects of which were similar to those of the Young Men's Association—to foster patriotism in the minds of young men, improve their education, and encourage good behaviour. There was absolutely no other object.

Baron Yun added that he had made a great mistake in accepting the position of head of the Association, and said that he had not heard anything about the objects of the organisation from Yang Ki-tak.

By the Court: Do you not mean that the objects of the Association underwent a change on the annexation of Korea being carried out by Japan?—Not at all. It was, however, a pity that I could not decline to assume the Directorship of the Society. I reminded the members that I would not accept the post if there were to be very violent acts connected with the newly amalgamated body. I heard Yi Seung-hun remark that it was a shame for the Koreans to do nothing against the Japanese Protectorate; he maintained that the people should be urged to show their feelings in the matter. Killing high officials was one way, he said, of doing this. I never heard anyone speak of assassinating the Governor-General, but I heard Yang Ki-tak say that as the Koreans were being dispossessed of their country, they should let the foreign Powers see that they were not satisfied with their condition. Yang urged the publication of a newspaper of their own in order to keep the minds of the people at home and abroad continually stimulated by printing articles dealing with political affairs of Korea, but he never said anything to me about killing Count Teruchi. Yang spoke some four years ago about taking the foreign Powers by surprise, but never said a word about assassinating the Governor-General.

## DENIAL OF INFLAMMATORY SPEECHES.

When the Taisong School held an athletic meeting at Minchang-dan just outside the walls of Pyong-yang, did you make a speech urging that the Korean Ministers, including Count Yi Wan-yong and two others, who were responsible for the signing of the Treaty of Annexation should be put out of the way?—I did not, and even had I thought so I could not have publicly made such a suggestion. What I did say was that the Society was not in the control of any one individual in Pyong-yang, but that it was under the control of the Korean people in general. I avoided touching upon any political questions in my speech. I did not hear Ok Kwang-pun remark to the audience that they should act as the name of the place—the "Altar of the People's Fidelity" suggested. About the same time as this athletic meeting was held, the ceremony of closing the Taisong School for the holidays was held, but I made no political speech then, nor did I urge the destruction of the men who signed the Treaty with Japan, and suggest that bachelors should be entrusted with the task of removing them. Any man who says that he heard me utter such thought, is saying what is grossly untrue. Nor is it true that Yi Chai-myong came to me and offered to execute this special mission. I did not hear Yi Seung-lun and An Tai-kuk propose to select men from their own respective districts in support of Yi Chai-myong to execute the mission. Neither did I express any opinion that the plot should not be placed in the whole charge of Yi Chai-myong and his young assistants, nor I gave any instruction holding that the matter should be supervised by Yi Seung-lun and An Tai-kuk. As for the meeting itself, I had no authority over it, as An and Yi were the promoters. I do not know whether the members of the New People's Society used to carry weapons, or whether weapons were stored at the offices of the *Ta Han Mui*

*Shinpo*. I do not know if members of the New People's Society were responsible for the attack on Count Yi, the Korean Premier, some months before the annexation, but if anyone says that this attack was the result of what was said at the meeting at Pyong-yang, he is committing perjury.

You must have been indignant at the annexation being carried out; did you not form a plan to restore Korean national rights?—I would never have found myself in this Court if I had possessed the power at that time to prevent Japan becoming lord over my native country.

Is it not reasonable to assume that anyone filled with a spirit of indignation would try to form a plan either to remove the cause of his displeasure or amend it to his satisfaction?—I was rather too old to do more than I did; but it is quite true I felt bitterly indignant at the position of my country.

In reply to further questions, Baron Yun said that shortly after the annexation he met in Kaisong An Tai-fuk and another man who had come from Pyong-yang, but he did not meet these men at Im Chichong's house outside the west gate of Seoul. Baron Yun said he went to Kaisong to give An the balance (¥400) of a donation of ¥500 which he had promised to give to the Taisong School.

By the Court: Did you have any conversation about the annexation?—No. An did not tell me that he and his companion could not resist doing something to oppose the annexation.

Does that mean that you, An, and the other man discussed what steps should be taken to resist the annexation?—No, not at all.

Did you tell them that no demonstration of an extreme nature should be carried out, but that a secret plan should be formed, and that the object of the New People's Society, which was to assassinate the Governor-General, should also be taken as the object of the secret

plan?—No, I did not make any such statement.

Replying to further questions, Baron Yun said he had never met Yang Ki-tak and Im Chi-chong at the latter's house. His confession to the police that he had frequently met them at Im's house was false. He had sent a man to Kaisong and Pyong-yang to investigate means for organising branches of the Young Men's Association, but had not instructed him to communicate with the New People's Society ordering them to send a representative to Seoul to meet him (Baron Yun) to talk over the proposed assassination of the Governor-General. He had no knowledge of representatives from the provinces assembling at the headquarters of the New People's Society, nor had he urged them to kill the Governor-General wherever they found an opportunity during his journey on the railway. He denied having informed the members of the Society that the Governor-General was leaving Seoul for New Wiju, nor did he report the subsequent movements of the Governor-General. He also denied having sent a teacher of Chinese classics in a certain school in Seoul to meet the provincial leaders of the New People's Society and arrange certain details in connection with the proposed assassination. It was also untrue that An Tai-kuk and Yi Seung-hung went to Seoul and met accused at a certain house, and were told by him that the news of the Governor-General's forthcoming departure was authentic, as it had leaked out from the Government-General. The statements made to the police by accused that he had met men from the provinces three times since August and discussed the conspiracy were not correct, and were due to misunderstanding. Baron Yun added that his "confession" at the Procurator's Office was also false.

By the Court: It is very strange that a man should admit what, in any circumstances, is a crime in the eyes of

the law.—That is so, but I had very good reason for admitting things I was not responsible for, and I should like to state those reasons now.

The Court: There is no necessity for you to do so for the time being.

In reply to further questions, Baron Yun said he knew Mr. McCune, Mr. Underwood, Mr. Gerdine, Mr. Harris, and other missionaries. He believed it was at Kaisong that he met two Koreans who were on their way to his house, *en route* to Japan, where they were going to purchase a printing plant, which was to be established at Pyong-yang. These men were not messengers sent to him by Mr. Underwood. The statement made by his servants that he (Baron Yun) frequently met Yang Ki-tak when he came to Seoul was incorrect. He was acquainted with several foreigners living in Seoul and at Syen Chuen, but he had never consulted them in regard to an attempt to assassinate the Governor-General, nor did he give instructions to the provincial members of the New People's Society to kill that official.

By the Court: Did you not tell the Public Procurator that you were in the position of adviser to Yang Ki-tak and others, that these men consulted you in regard to the objects of the New People's Society, but you could not tell them not to proceed to extremes, and that in short you were regarded by the members as the Director of the New People's Society, against your own will?—At any rate, I was not the leader of any organisation plotting to kill the Governor-General.

Did you not, on more than one occasion, make plans to assassinate the Governor-General?—No.

The leaders of the Society have all admitted that you were the leader of the movement.—It is untrue. If men have given evidence to the effect stated, in my opinion the explanation is this. I am a man who is well known among the

Koreans, and who is known to have been opposed to the changes which have taken place in Korea. Consequently, they may have thought it advisable to use my name in order to better carry out their plans. It is mere supposition to say that I was with Ok Kwan-pin, Im Chi-chong, and Yang Kitak to discuss the alleged conspiracy. When these three and An Tai-kuk were arrested last year on a charge of conspiracy, I declared myself to be in no way connected with the case, but in vain. I was also arrested. Seeing that I was regarded by the authorities as being connected with the alleged plot because I was always resentful at the political changes which had taken place in Korea, I thought I might be released if I said I was the head of the Society and had given orders to assassinate the Governor-General much against my own will. I thought the case would be concluded if I made such a confession, and was punished in accordance with the law.\*

It seems that you have confessed to being the chief mover in the conspiracy, but as a man cannot you give details of the underlying circumstances, just as you stated to the police and the Procurator?—I was forced to confess to that effect.

Was it not because you thought you might be released that you confessed the real facts of the conspiracy, and now—as you have been detained in prison instead of being released—you attempt to deny your own confession?—It is for the Court to judge.

The Court here stated that the charge against Baron Yun was based first on the evidence given by members of the New People's Society at Pyongyang and elsewhere, and was endorsed by the evidence given in Court by Baron Yun himself.

In reply to further questions, Baron Yun said that a Bible meeting was held at Kaisong, but he did not mention at

that meeting the failures he and the members of the New People's Society had met with in their attempts to kill the Governor-General. If any of the men now under arrest had stated to the contrary, it was untrue.

By the Court: You still deny that which is evident—a fact which shows that the Koreans are a people difficult to understand?—Yes.

Baron Yun proceeded to say that the statement made by him to the Procurator during the preliminary examination that the object of the New People's Society had been changed and was aimed at the assassination of the Governor-General was untrue. The statements that he had notified the people along the line to prepare for action when the Governor-General was on his way to the opening ceremony at the Yalu bridge, that he had sent Lyu Tong-sol to places along the railway advising the people to form "die-hard" parties so as not to repeat former failures, and other "confessions" were also untrue. He greatly regretted having to deny what he had once admitted, but the admissions were made on certain conditions. He denied being the ringleader of the conspiracy, and said that if any members of the New People's Society had so described him, it was a malicious use of his name. He did not retract his former statements merely because he was now face to face with the members of the Society in Court.

By the Court: Apart from the question of your guilt or innocence of the charge made against you, it is really disgraceful that a man of your rank and ability should retract statements previously made before the police and judicial authorities.—That is so, but I am obliged to do so, owing to the fact that the "confession" was obtained as the result of certain circumstances.

Mr. Ogawa, counsel for the defence, begged leave to interpose. The Court assenting, counsel said he wished to ascertain from accused why he now denied the

\* Baron Yun's statement as given here is rather confused; from a summarised report of his remarks (appearing in the appendix) his meaning is made much plainer.

truth of his former statements, as this point might be of importance in deciding the case. Counsel said he had already had an interview with accused and questioned him on this point, but had failed to extract from him the real reason for his retraction. Baron Yun had apparently "confessed" certain statements thinking that by so doing he would be released. Counsel understood that his client had decided to retract the statement made by him on April 6th last, and he (counsel) wished to ask the reason for this step.

Baron Yun, in reply, said:—"When first arrested I meant to deny the charges made, but my denials were not accepted. The charges were based on evidence given by the other accused, and I came to the conclusion that there was no hope of clearing myself and had to admit what was charged against me. In short, these other men dragged me into crime and disgrace. It is true that I was greatly surprised at learning on April 6th that the examination of the present case had not been completed. Many of accused being still under examination then a public examination of the case still pending. I thought my 'confession'—which had been made with the object of procuring lenient treatment for myself when the case was decided—would involve others in trouble, and so I resolved to withdraw my previous statement on being brought into open Court."

At this point the proceedings were adjourned for tiffin.

The first man to be examined after the Court re-assembled was Kim Il-chom, aged 23, a farmer living at Syen Chuen, in North Pyongan-do. In reply to the questions addressed to him by the Court, accused made some extraordinary statements regarding his own plans and those of his associates. So remarkable, in fact, were his statements that it seems almost certain that the man is mentally deranged. However,

in the course of his examination he made a number of grave statements of which probably more will be heard later.

#### THE NEW PEOPLE'S SOCIETY AND ASSASSINATION.

Kim at once admitted that he was a member of the New People's Society, which he said he joined on the advice of a friend. The Society was established with the object of promoting the spirit of patriotism among the Korean people, of restoring the national rights, and of establishing a military school for young Koreans. The members of the Society intended to carry out their first object on the occasion of Japan being engaged in war with another country. It was not one of the avowed objects of the Society to kill the Governor-General and other high officials, but some of the members were of opinion that such assassinations were advisable. Accused could not recall any occasion when such action was discussed among them, but prior to the annexation the members of Society had made plans to assassinate the Resident-General and the Ministers of the Korean Government.

Asked to state who were the leaders of the Society, the accused said Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak were the principals. In North Pyongan-do a man named Yi Seung-hun was the local leader, but at Syen Chuen (where accused lived) there was no recognised leader, though accused himself had considerable influence among the members. In the winter of 1909 he went to Port Arthur with the intention of visiting An Chung-keun (the assassin of Prince Ito) who was in prison there awaiting trial. Accused said his object in joining the New People's Society being to further the welfare of his country, he wished to see An when he heard that this man had killed Japan's greatest statesman. The journey to Port Arthur was made on his own initiative, and at his own expense; he did not consult the other members of the Society in regard to his journey, nor did

to go as their representative. On arriving at Port Arthur, however, he found it impossible to obtain permission to meet An. On his way back he bought 25 revolvers at Mukden for about ¥300; this money he had borrowed, but did not obtain it from Yang Chom-miung. The statement to this effect made during the preliminary examination before the Procurator was false. In addition to the revolvers he bought at Mukden 250 rounds of ammunition, which he brought back to Korea in a sack. The statement that he had hidden the weapons and ammunition in the ceiling of a class-room at the Syen Chuen mission school (conducted by Mr. McCune) was also false.

The Judge then drew the attention of the accused to a large box tapping it nervously several times with a pencil as he did so, and asked him if he remembered having seen it before. Accused said he saw it for the first time during his preliminary examination in the Procurator's Office. He denied having admitted that he had kept revolvers in the box.

#### A MAD THIRST FOR REVENGE.

In reply to further questions, accused denied all knowledge of the leading members of the New People's Society having attempted to proceed from Korea to Japan, in the guise of a special envoy from the Korean people to express regret at the assassination of Prince Ito, but having as their real object the murder of certain other high Japanese officials. Accused, however, admitted that he himself thought of going over to Japan and killing Prince Katsura (who was then Premier), thinking that by so doing he could restore Korea's national rights. He mentioned his plan to several others, including Yang Chom-miung, who endorsed the scheme. Accused had got as far as Seoul on his way to Japan when the annexation of Korea was formally announced, whereupon he gave up the idea of going further and returned to his native village. Disgusted at the failure

of his attempt to see An at Port Arthur, and at the abandonment of his scheme to proceed to Japan to kill Prince Katsura, he came to the conclusion that his desire to kill people was the effect of modern civilisation brought into his country from Europe and America, so he resolved to proceed to Europe with the object of assassinating the President of the Hague Tribunal.

This extraordinary statement caused the whole Court—from the Judges to the journalists—to smile. Accused, however, went on to say that he consulted Yang Kit-tak in regard to this new scheme, who told him it was quite impossible and ridiculous, but as he persisted in urging the scheme Yang at last consented to his setting out to carry his plan into effect. Eventually, however, he had to abandon the idea, as he was unable to get the money to pay for the expenses of such a journey.

By the Court: What were your feelings when the annexation of Korea was effected two years ago?—I had no particular feelings about the matter, but I had some lingering regret that I had been unable to carry out my original plans. I then began to think about earning money as well.

#### THE SYEN CHUEN RAILWAY-STATION INCIDENT.

In reply to further questions regarding the plan to kill the Governor-General, accused said his desire to carry out this assassination became very keen after the annexation, and it was with this plan in mind that he went to the railway-station at Syen Chuen on August 20th, 1910, as admitted by him in his preliminary examination by the Procurator. He had never been told by anyone that Baron Yun and Yang Kit-tak had planned the assassination of the Governor-General. Meetings of members of the New People's Society had been held at Mr. McCune's mission school, at Yang Chom-miung's house, and other places in Syen Chuen,



and accused admitted having attended them. At one of these meetings it was decided to purchase more revolvers. On September 20th accused and a number of others, all armed with revolvers, went to Syen Chuen Station under the pretence of welcoming Count Terauchi, but the Governor-General failed to appear. On two subsequent occasions they went to the railway-station, but each time found that the reports they had received of the Governor-General's arrival were inaccurate. About November 15th Ok Kwang-pia arrived at Syen Chuen from Pyong-yang, and at a meeting of the New People's Society which was called he told those present that the Governor-General really was coming, and that the news had been obtained by Baron Yun from an official in the Government-General.

#### QUESTIONS IMPLYING COMPLICITY OF FOREIGN MISSIONARIES.

Ok then went on to Wiju, and addressing the students of the Taimyong mission school and a number of people interested in the New People's Society, urged them to cultivate the same way of thinking as An, the assassin of Prince Ito. Accused did not know whether about 20 men came from Whanghai-do to Syen Chuen on November 23rd and consulted the local leaders of the movement; neither did he know whether the local members of the Society were of the opinion that the students of the Syen Chuen mission school should be urged to support the movement, or whether the Principal, Mr. McCune, had been requested to address his students to that effect. Accused also said he did not know whether Mr. McCune had uttered inflammatory statements based upon the story of David and Goliath, nor did he know if Kim, upon arriving at Syen Chuen, had called upon Mr. McCune and another foreigner to seek their protection and assistance in realising the object of the conspirators, and to ask them (Mr. McCune and the other foreigner) to send the news abroad

when the plans laid were successfully carried out.

#### ANOTHER SCENE AT THE RAILWAY- STATION.

Accused denied any knowledge of An Tai-kuk bringing a number of men from Pyong-yang to Syen Chuen on or about November 26th with the object of assassinating the Governor-General, and also denied all knowledge of Kim bringing a number of men down on the same errand. He admitted that An Tai-kuk had come down, and that a meeting of members of the New People's Society had been called, at which revolvers were distributed to those present. No weapons were given to the students of the mission school. The following day, just as accused and others were going to the railway-station, a party of about 30 members of the Society from Pyong-yang arrived, and joining the Syen Chuen men the whole party proceeded to the station. Accused gave the Syen Chuen people 25 revolvers to distribute between them.

#### HOW A SALUTE PREVENTED A SHOT.

The Governor-General, however, did not alight from the train on this occasion, and the conspirators met at a certain place—not the mission school, as alleged—when Yi Seung-hun, the leader from Pyongan-do, delivered a speech. He said that the assassination of Count Terauchi had been ordered by Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak, who were also representing the voice of the thirteen provinces of Korea. Yi therefore urged his hearers to carry out their plans successfully. Accused said he did not know of any statement made by Mr. McCune that they would be able to recognise the Governor-General when he (Mr. McCune) shook hands with him at the station. Yi Seung-hun instructed An Tai-kuk and one other to take charge of the arrangements at Syen Chuen, and sent some other members of the Society to Kwaksan and Chyongju to repeat the at-

tacks on the Governor-General in the event of the men at Syen Chuen failing to execute their designs. Next morning the conspirators again went to the railway-station, carrying revolvers concealed under their clothes. The students of the mission school also went to the station. The arrangement decided upon among the conspirators was that as soon as the Governor-General's train was heard approaching they should grasp their revolvers, and those who found themselves in the most advantageous position for carrying out the plot should fire at their intended victim. When the train stopped the Governor-General alighted and walked along the platform, saluting the rows of Japanese and Koreans as he passed. Accused said he was all ready to shoot, but upon saluting the Governor-General his mind changed, and he failed to carry out the pre-arranged plot. Accused also said that he did not see the Governor-General shaking hands with Mr. McCune.

The Presiding Judge, holding up a long Japanese sword, asked accused if O Taik-uni, also one of the accused, had brought this sword from Whanghai-do and exchanged it with accused for a revolver just before the conspirators proceeded to the railway-station.

Accused replied in the negative, adding that his previous admission that the exchange was made was false.

The Court then read out a list of names, and asked if all these men belonged to the New People's Society.

Accused said that all those whose names were read were members of the Society, but denied that any of the students from the mission school were members. In reply to a further question, accused said that the revolvers he had bought on his way back from Port Arthur were all disposed of by himself.

Mr. Mori (counsel for the defence) asked permission to question accused on certain points, but counsel's application was over-ruled.

#### WHOLESALE RECANTATIONS.

The next man to be examined was Yang Chom-miung, aged 34, a merchant, of North Pyongan-do. He denied being a member of the New People's Society, denied having heard anything of its objects, and denied being the local leader at Syen Chuen. He had heard that An Chung-keun had killed Prince Ito, but denied having sent Kim Il-chom (the man just previously examined) to Port Arthur to inquire after An's health, and denied having given him ¥400 for travelling expenses. Accused said he had no particular feelings himself on learning of the annexation, and he had never planned any extreme measures to be taken by his countrymen. He did not instigate the members of the New People's Society to assassinate the Governor-General, nor did he commission Chai Tan-kyun to purchase revolvers. He knew nothing of the coming of the Governor-General to Syen Chuen on any of the occasions referred to. He did not convene a meeting of members of the People's Society and report to them that he had already collected 40 revolvers and ¥4,000 towards the expenses of the plot. He did not consult any foreigners about the conspiracy, nor had he heard Mr. McCune address inflammatory remarks to his students and to the local people interested in the Society. Finally, accused denied having gone to the railway station to make an attempt on the life of the Governor-General.

Asked by the Court why he now retracted all the statements made by him to the police and before the Procurator at the preliminary examination, accused replied that he was forced to confess. He added that he called upon Baron Yoo at Kalsong on his way to Seoul, but this visit was not the result of advice given him by Mr. McCune. About this time, accused added, he bought a dozen pocket electric lamps, but later on disposed of them.

## POCKET ELECTRIC LAMPS FOR CONSPIRATORS.

Shown by the Court one large and one small electric lamp for carrying in the pocket, accused said they had not been purchased by him. The lamps he bought were not intended to be used in connection with the attempt on the life of the Governor-General, but had been purchased by him in the ordinary course of business.

In reply to further questions, accused said he did not advise the members to organise "die-hard" parties in order to kill Count Terauchi, neither did he order men to proceed to Chyongju and Kwaksan to make further attacks on the Governor-General if that at Syen Chuen failed.

Pointing to the large box already mentioned, the Court asked accused if he had stated at the police station and at the preliminary examination before the Procurator that this box had formerly contained a number of revolvers, and had been concealed in the ceiling of a classroom at Mr. McCune's school at Syen Chuen.

In reply accused admitted that he had made such a statement, but explained that the admission was the result of the unsoundness of his mind at the time—with which enigmatic remark to-day's proceedings came to a close, and the hearing adjourned until Monday, July 1st.

### THIRD DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

#### COMPLAINTS OF TORTURE.

#### THE INSINUATIONS AGAINST MISSIONARIES DENIED.

SEOUL, July 2nd.

Yesterday (Monday) was the third day of this remarkable trial, and the most important feature of the proceedings was the fact that practically all those who were examined were either teachers or students at Mr. McCune's mission school at Syen Chuen. Another important fact was that several of the ac-

cused were able to protest to the Court through the interpreter that their previous "confessions" were obtained from them by the application of torture. At previous hearings statements of this kind have been made by the accused, but I now learn that the interpreter has substituted other and much milder terms for the word meaning "torture" used by the Koreans in their statements in Court. The question of interpretation, in fact, and also of the general attitude of the Court towards the accused, is the subject of considerable comment among those who are acquainted with both the Korean and the Japanese language.

Yesterday fourteen men were examined by the Court, their names being as follows:—Kil Chin-hyong, aged 21; Chai Taek-yun, aged 30; No Chung-heun, aged 39; Kang Keui-chan, aged 39; An Chun, aged 46; Chang Si-ook, aged 32; Son Chong-ook, aged 25; Hong Song-ik, aged 31; Kwok Tai-chong, aged 25; Yang Chun-hui, aged 28; Yi Chang-sik, aged 19; Chyng Tok-yun, aged 24; Kim Yong-whan, aged 21; and Yi Kiuyong, aged 21. The first six were examined before the Court rose for tiffin.

#### DAVID AND GOLIATH AGAIN.

The first man to be examined, Kil, is a graduate of the Syen Chuen mission school. He said, in reply to questions by the Court, that he knew nothing about the New People's Society, and was not a party to any conspiracy to assassinate Count Terauchi. He denied having ever approached Mr. McCune or other foreign missionaries on behalf of the Society, as a result of which (it was suggested by the Court) Mr. McCune had delivered an inflammatory address to the students of the mission school and to those interested in the Society's alleged scheme. Accused also denied having collected 70 re-

\* Reference to this important question is made in an article received from another correspondent in Seoul, and appearing in the Appendix.

volvers and several thousand yen for the funds of the Society.

By the Court: Did you meet members of the Society from Whanghai-do?—No.

Did you hear Syon Oo-byok (a teacher at the Syen Chuen mission school) suggest that Mr. McCune should address the students with the object of inducing them to support the conspiracy, as a result of which suggestion Mr. McCune spoke to the boys making reference to a certain story in the Old Testament?—No.

Is it true that in the Bible there is a story of a weak man killing a mighty warrior?—Yes; he was killed by the slinging of a stone.

Accused went on to say that his statement to the police and before the Procurator at the preliminary examination to the effect that he did remember Mr. McCune making a speech in which this reference was made was false. He had to admit the statement because of the "pressure" brought to bear by the authorities. Accused denied having explained to the Procurator that there were two opinions as to which was the brave man, David or Goliath, but that it was correct to regard the former as being the brave man. Accused also denied having said that Mr. McCune was of this opinion, and added that if he had made such a statement, he must have been mentally deranged at the time.

#### THE INSINUATIONS AGAINST MISSIONARIES.

By the Court: Do you know whether Mr. Roberts (a missionary) delivered an address to the students, urging them to be bold in attempting a great undertaking?—No, I do not know.

Do you know whether Mr. McCune told the students and others concerned in the plot to shoot at the man with whom he would shake hands on the platform at the railway station?—No, I do not know.

Did you go to Syen Chuen station that day, disguised as a student of the mission school?—No.

Did you not say in your examination at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's office that when the Governor-General walked along the station platform saluting those who were gathered there, Mr. McCune and Mr. Roberts signalled by their looks to the conspirators, suggesting that they should hurry up and make the contemplated attack upon the Governor-General?—I may have said so, but if I did it was the result of being forced by circumstances [i.e. tortured] to reply in the affirmative to every question put to me by the police.

Did you meet Lyn Tong-sol in October last year to discuss plans for killing the Governor-General, who was then proceeding to the ceremony held to celebrate the opening of the Yalu bridge?—No, I did not.

This concluded the examination of the accused, and the next five men of those above-mentioned were examined. Their statements are not worth quoting in full, and may be easily summarised. They all denied being members of the New People's Society, denied having had any idea of assassinating the Governor-General, or having been instructed to do so by Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak, denied having proceeded to Syen Chuen station to carry out the assassination, and denied knowing or having heard that Mr. McCune and other missionaries were connected with any such plot. Upon the examination of these five men being concluded, the Court adjourned for tidun.

The first three men examined after the recess, Son, Hong, and Kwok made statements practically the same as those of the five men examined immediately before them. The next accused to be called up was Yang Chun-hui, a younger brother of Yang Chom-miang. This man, too, denied being a member of the New People's Society, and denied being concerned in any attempt on the life of the Governor-General.

By the Court: Did you tell the students of the Taimyong school to each go

along inspired with the same ideas as An Chung-keun, the assassin of Prince Ito?—No.

Did you distribute revolvers among them at the Syen Chuen mission school before going to the railway station to meet Count Terauchi?—I did not.

Can you not remember the names of the men to whom revolvers were given?—I cannot give any names, since I know nothing of the incident. My previous statement at the preliminary investigation that I did distribute revolvers was the result of mental affliction [*i.e.* torture].

Accused further denied that his brother—Yang Chom-miung—was the ring-leader at Syen Chuen of the conspiracy.

#### EXAMINATION OF SCHOOL STUDENTS.

The next prisoner examined was Yi Chang-sik, a good-looking youth who is a student in the 4th year class at Syen Chuen mission school. The salient portions of his examination are as follows:—

By the Court: Has the principal of your school (Mr. McCune) ever addressed you and other students, urging you to shoot the Governor-General?—No.

Do you know that Yang Chom-miung\* collected about 70 revolvers and money amounting to about ₩4,000?—No.

Were you selected from among the students of your school and given a revolver, with which you were to act against Count Terauchi?—I was not.

Did you know that Count Terauchi was passing through Syen Chuen in October last on his way to the Yalu bridge opening ceremony?—No.

The next prisoner to be examined was another student from the Syen Chuen mission school, named Chyong, who stated that he went to work in order to earn money to pay his school expenses. He said that he had never even heard of the New People's Society. The following is the most important part of his examination:—

By the Court: Have you ever heard Mr. McCune, the Principal of your school, say that Count Terauchi, the

Governor-General, was detrimental to the welfare of Korea, and should therefore be killed?—I have never heard him say so.

Why did you tell the police that you had heard him make such a statement?—If I made such an answer it was the reply of a man whose feelings were paralysed [*i.e.* a "confession" obtained by torture].

Did you receive a revolver from Mr. McCune before proceeding to the railway-station to await the Governor-General's arrival?—No.

Do you know whether Mr. McCune advised his students to shoot the man with whom he would shake hands on the platform?—I do not know.

Have you ever seen this box [already mentioned in the examination of previous accused] concealed in the ceiling of a class-room at the mission school?—No.

Did Mr. McCune ever ask you to take this box to Mr. Roberts' house, and did Mr. Roberts take out the contents and put them in a drawer in his room?—No.

Why did you make these statements to the Procurator?—It was a mere story on my part (*i.e.* was forced by torture).

On returning to the school in September last, after the summer vacation, did Mr. McCune tell you that you had better go away, as otherwise you would be summoned by the police?—No. I told the Procurator that Mr. McCune did say so, but the statement was false [*i.e.* was elicited by torture].

Kim, another student of the mission school, on being examined, denied being connected with the New People's Society. No one had instructed him to assassinate the Governor-General at Syen Chuen. Accused went to the station to welcome the Governor-General, and did not carry a revolver.

By the Court: Why did you make different statements to these at the preliminary examination?—To escape further torture.

The last of the accused to be examined yesterday was Yi, also a student at the mission school at Syen Chuen, and who had been entrusted with the keys of the school. His examination disclosed some striking "facts" and the manner in which they were procured. He denied all knowledge of the New People's Society, and said he heard for the first time from the police the alleged fact that about November 15th, 1910, he had been told

by Syon Oo-hyok and Kwok Tai-chong (both teachers in the mission school) that the Governor-General was coming to North Pyongan do, and that he (accused) should take advantage of the good opportunity thus afforded for killing the Governor-General. These allegations he had admitted, but now retracted.

By the Court: Did Mr. McCune quote an instance from a popular history of Europe an event in which an humble countryman executed a great thing for the sake of his country? Did he suggest then that his students should follow the example?—No.

Are you aware that An Taikuk came to Syon Chuen from Pyong-yang to warn the members of the New People's Society of the expected arrival of Count Terauchi the following day?—I do not know.

Did you proceed to the railway-station with a five-chambered revolver concealed under your clothes?—No.

Do you know whether a meeting of members of the Society was held in the evening at the mission school, and Mr. McCune ridiculed the men on their failure to carry out their plans, saying that they must have very little resolution to have missed such a good opportunity to execute their designs?—I do not know of any such incident.

How is it that you admitted all this to the police?—I admitted these statements were actual facts when examined, but only because I wanted to escape further torture by the officials, which I could not stand any longer.

Did Mr. McCune order you to burn certain documents when members of the New People's Society began to be arrested last September?—No, he did not. At the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office I stated that Mr. McCune did give me such instructions, but this was untrue. I made the statement to escape further ill-treatment.

Did Mr. McCune advise the students of his school not to repeat the folly of attempting to carry out the assassination of the Governor-General with a large number of men, but to select a small party of gallant "dare-to-die" men?—No, he did not.

Did Mr. McCune tell his students to offer themselves for service in such a party if they wanted to, and did you apply to join?—No.

These further insinuations against a foreign missionary concluded the examination of the accused, and the proceedings were adjourned till next day.

## FOURTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### REPEATED COMPLAINTS OF TORTURE.

SEOUL, July 3rd.

Yesterday was the fourth day of this trial, and the proceedings are becoming somewhat monotonous. One after another, day after day, the accused men deny the truth of their alleged "confessions," and complain of the torture to which they were subjected in order to wring these "confessions" from them. From the statements of these men in open Court, it seems that various questions were put to them in the course of their preliminary examination, and they were required to answer "yes" to each question. If what these men now say is true, hesitation in saying "yes" to every question put to them led to "pressure being brought to bear" upon them, and any indication of retraction before the Procurator during the preliminary examination was checked by a threat to send the prisoner back to the police headquarters for "further examination,"—a threat which seems to have been peculiarly effective. Up to the present there is no indication of the Court being disposed to make any searching inquiry into these allegations of ill-treatment and torture; perhaps this will come later on, after the examination of the accused men has been concluded. In justice to the responsible Japanese authorities—no less than the unhappy Koreans themselves—the strictest investigation should be made into the wholesale allegations of threats, ill-treatment, and torture which the prisoners declare they have been subjected to between the time of their arrest and their public trial. As already mentioned, yesterday's examination of eighteen prisoners was very much like the proceedings of the previous day, though now and again a new suggestion of foreign complicity, or a more than usually strong and outspoken protest against alleged ill-treatment and torture lent additional interest to the proceedings.

The first prisoner to be examined was a student named Yi Sun-ku, aged 19. He said he knew nothing about the New People's Society. He admitted having gone to Syon Chuen railway-station on November 27th, 1910, but denied having gone with the intention of killing the Governor-General with a sword; he

merely went to welcome that official. Another student of the Syen Chuen mission school—Kim Sun-do, aged 19—was next examined, and also denied any knowledge of the New People's Society. He denied having gone to the railway-station on November 27th and 28th, 1910, with the object of assassinating the Governor-General. He knew nothing whatever of the large box shown (already referred to), and had never been urged by anyone to take part in a conspiracy. He admitted having "confessed" to all these statements at the police station, but this was because he had been tortured by the officers.

#### AN ALLEGED ALIBI.

Yi Tong-wha, aged 22, a graduate of the Syen Chuen mission school, was next examined. Having denied being a member of the New People's Society, and having consulted members of the Society in regard to the conspiracy, the examination proceeded:—

By the Court: Were you appointed a member of the committee for raising money?—No.

Did you enter people's houses and obtain money by threatening them with a revolver, telling them that they should give you money for the sake of their country?—No.

Did you go to Syen Chuen railway-station with the others to make an attempt on the life of the Governor-General?—No. I was not in Syen Chuen on those days, as I was ill.

Asked why he had testified to the contrary at the police station, accused said if he had admitted these "facts" he must have been out of his senses [*i.e.* tortured.]

#### A SCHOOL TEACHER'S EVIDENCE.

Chai Syo-chan, aged 22, a graduate of the Syen Chuen mission school, and until recently employed as a teacher at a school in the interior said he was told about the formation of the New People's Society in November 1910, but knew nothing about its objects. It was not true that he joined the Society on the recommendation of Chang Si-ook and Sin Hyo-pyom, teachers at the Syen Chuen school. Accused having denied a number of charges, including one of having gone to the railway-station with a revolver, said:—"I denied these charges to the police, but being subjected to torture at the hands of the officers, I was forced to admit the charges in order to escape further agony.

The next prisoner to be examined was Yi Chyo-sun, aged, 23, a graduate of the Syen Chuen mission school. In reply to questions he denied having been persuaded to join the New People's Society by Sin Hyo-pyom, his former teacher. It was untrue that Sin had observed that a man should do anything for the sake of his country at a time of national crisis. Accused said he admitted these allegations at the police headquarters, but that was because he was submitted to bodily torture, inflicted upon him by police officers. He denied having attended a meeting of the Society, at which he was alleged to have been appointed a member of the committee appointed to obtain funds for carrying out the alleged conspiracy. He had not broken into the houses of wealthy people and obtained money from them at the muzzle of a revolver. He denied having received any information from An Tai-kuk about the Governor-General's visit to Syen Chuen on his way to New Wiju in November, 1910, nor did he go to the railway-station carrying a revolver concealed under his clothes on any occasion. He informed the Court that he had admitted all these charges at the preliminary examination, because he had been forced to do so by the police by means of torture.

#### THE INSINUATIONS AGAINST FOREIGNERS.

With the examination of Kim Song-pong, aged 21, a student of the Syen Chuen mission school, the insinuations relating to foreign complicity in the alleged conspiracy were again brought out. Accused having denied all connection with the New People's Society, and denied hearing Ok Kwan-pin say—at a meeting at the Taimyong School—that Count Terauchi must be killed, the examination proceeded as follows:—

By the Court: Is it true that Kwok Taichong proposed that the members of the New People's Society should consult certain foreigners in regard to their plans, and that the members subsequently saw five missionaries—including Messrs. McCune, Roberts, and Sharrocks—who attended a meeting held at the mission school, and agreed that the members should protect their rights?—I do not know.

Why did you make these statements at the police headquarters?—Because of the torture applied to my body.

Do you know anything of the address given by Mr. McCune urging the con-



spirators on by quoting from the Old Testament?—No.

A number of other questions were asked by the Court, to all of which accused replied in the negative. He admitted having gone to the railway-station, but he went with the other members of the school, under instructions, to welcome Count Terauchi, and the visit was not arranged with a view to assassination. The examination continued:—

By the Court: Did Lyu Tong-sol address a meeting in October last at the Syen Chuen school, and warn those present that Count Terauchi was coming on his way to the Yalu, and urge the members of the New People's Society and the school students to avail themselves of this opportunity to assassinate him?—Not to my knowledge.

Was Mr. McCune present at that meeting, and did he suggest that in order to effectively carry out the plan they should decide beforehand who should fire at Count Terauchi?—I know nothing about it.

Was this suggestion of Mr. McCune's accepted, and did several of the senior students of the Syen Chuen mission school volunteer for the service?—I do not know.

Owing to the large number of applicants who wanted to be appointed to fire at the Governor-General, was it agreed that the man to fire first was to be chosen by Mr. McCune?—I do not know.

Did you not make these statements at the police headquarters?—Yes, but under the pain of torture.

Why did you later on repeat these statements to the Procurator?—Because I was told that if I retracted what I had "confessed" I should be sent back to the police headquarters, and I was afraid of being killed by the police if I contradicted my former statement.

With this remarkable assertion the examination of this prisoner concluded.

The next man to be examined was Kim Hyon-sik, aged 24, a student of the Syen Chuen mission school. He denied being involved in the "conspiracy" in any way, and knew nothing of the alleged fruitless journeys to the railway-station.

By the Court: Did Mr. McCune tell the party of men that they must be more careful in regard to their behaviour, otherwise their plans would fall through?—I do not know.

#### THE BIBLE STORY AGAIN.

Do you know whether Mr. McCune called a meeting at his school of students

and those concerned in the conspiracy, and by quoting from the Bible urged them to make up their minds firmly and carry out their resolution?—I do not know, but I attended a meeting where Mr. McCune instructed us on belief in Christ.

Were you given a revolver by Mr. McCune?—No.

Were you paid to proceed to the railway-station on November 27th and 28th with the object of taking part in the contemplated assassination?—I was not.

Is it true that Mr. McCune, at a meeting of members of the New People's Society, said that the Korean people had very little pluck to let an excellent opportunity pass as they did?—I do not know.

Do you recognise this box?—No.

Have you ever seen it full of revolvers in Room 7 of the mission school—the key of which was in your charge?—No.

Did you take this box, with the revolvers contained therein, from the ceiling of Room 7 and carry it to Yang Chom-mung's house, afterwards taking it back to the school?—No, I did not.

When some of the teachers and students of the mission school were arrested about October 20th last, did Mr. McCune instruct you to burn certain documents?—No.

Did he tell you to take the revolvers from this box, put them into a kerosene case, and to conceal the box in the ceiling of the kitchen?—He did not.

Do you remember afterwards carrying the box down, putting it in a cellar in the dining-room of the school, and afterwards carrying it away over to a hill and burying it in the ground?—No, I know nothing about this; but when I was examined in the Procurator's office I was asked a number of questions, and was made to acknowledge them simply by saying "yes" to every question. It is true that I was engaged by Mr. McCune, but I never did anything like this.

Did Yang Chom-mung see you in October last and say that Count Terauchi should be assassinated on his way to the opening of the Yalu bridge and did you say you would do it?—No, I did not say so, and to this day I do not even know the face of Yang.

When you were in fear of being arrested by the police, did Mr. McCune tell you not to confess to any facts connected with the conspiracy, and that you must not mention the names of any foreigners implicated, and is not this the reason

that you will not now confess these facts in open Court?—No, not at all. I would not conceal anything from the Court, neither would I say anything in Court which is untrue, for if I did I should be regarded as having committed a criminal offence.

#### MISSIONARIES AS MIMICS.

Cha Heni-syon, aged 23, another student of the Syen Chuen mission school, informed the Court in reply to questions that he had not joined the New People's Society. He denied having gone to the railway-station with the object of assassinating the Governor-General, and denied having broken into the houses of wealthy people and terrified them into giving him money for the Society.

By the Court: Do you know whether, after the failure of all attempts to assassinate the Governor-General, the conspirators assembled at the mission school and Mr. McCune expressed his displeasure at their lack of courage?—I know nothing of such an incident.

Did Mr. McCune at an entertainment imitate the behaviour of a drunken man, Mr. Roberts imitate the bellowing of a bull, and Mr. Sharrocks imitate the singing of a bird?—I do not know.

Why did you make statements to this effect?—I had to admit them as facts, as I was threatened by an official in the Procurator's Office, who said I would be sent back to the police headquarters if I did not admit them to be true.

The next prisoner, Yi Chong-sun, aged 23, also a student of the mission school, said he knew nothing of the New People's Society or of any plot. He denied having gone to Syen Chuen from his home at Chyongju to inform anyone of the coming of Count Terauchi. He went to Syen Chuen station on two occasions, but not with the object of assassinating the Governor-General, neither had he extorted money from people by threats. All his statements to the contrary at the police headquarters were false. Two other mission school students—Kim Tai-hyon, aged 20, and La Pong-kiu, aged 28—were examined, and gave similar denials to the charges made by the Court. The proceedings were then adjourned for fifteen minutes.

#### MORE ABOUT THE SCENE AT THE STATION

On the Court re-assembling another student of the mission school, Syon Oo-hyok, aged 22, was examined.

By the Court: Were you one of fifty armed students picked out by Mr. McCune?—I was not.

Did you go to the station armed with a revolver?—No, and it would have been impossible for anyone to do so, since every Korean was searched before being admitted to the station.

Did Mr. McCune go to the station?—Yes, and he shook hands with Count Terauchi, when he walked down the platform.

Did you go to the station with the intention of shooting the Governor-General, and have a revolver in your hand ready to fire, but were unable to do so owing to the Governor-General being surrounded by subordinates?—I did not.

Did you distribute revolvers among your comrades in the school before going to the station?—No, I did not.

Did you request Mr. McCune to deliver an inflammatory address to the students so that they would make up their minds to carry out the assassination?—I did not.

Are you aware that Kim Il-chom [the crazy farmer who wanted to go to Europe to kill the President of the Hague Tribunal] has given evidence to the effect that you were one of the conspirators?—The evidence of a man like Kim, who has no fixed property, should not be accepted by the Court. [This reply was made by accused in reference to the well known passage found in Mencius, "Without fixed property no one can have a settled mind"].

#### EXAMINATION OF A CHRISTIAN PASTOR.

A tall, elderly man named Yang Chon-paik, aged 43, was next examined. He is a Christian Pastor living in North Pyongan-do. Accused having denied all connection with the New People's Society and the alleged conspiracy, the examination proceeded:—

Did you request any foreigner to help in carrying out the conspiracy?—I did not.

Did you ask any foreigner to speak to the students and stimulate them on the matter?—I did not.

Is it true that An Tai-kuk came to Syen Chuen in November 1910 and told you that the Governor-General was passing through next day on his way to New Wiju, and you armed the students with revolvers and proceeded to the station?—It is not true.

Did you again go to the station the following day with a party, and see the

Governor-General walking down the platform, saluting as he passed you, but owing to the strict guard kept by the police and gendarmes, you were unable to carry out your scheme?—It is not true.

Did you tell all this to the police?—I did not narrate all these statements at the police headquarters, but simply said "yes" to the questions put to me. As a matter of fact, I was not in the province on the days in question.

In concluding the examination, accused denied having attended a meeting of the New People's Society at Kaisong in June last year, denied having had an interview with Baron Yun at Kaisong, and denied having had a consultation with Lyu Tong-sol about making another attempt upon Count Terauchi while on his way to attend the opening of the Yalu bridge.

#### AN OLD FARMER'S STURDY DENIALS.

The next prisoner to be examined was Chyon Hhun-chik, whose age was given as 52, but who was so feeble that he had to be assisted when called up for examination. Though feeble in body, the accused made a sturdy denial of the charges brought against him. Having denied all knowledge of the New People's Society, the examination proceeded as follows:—

You told the police that you were made aware of the real object of the Society about two months after you joined.—The statement I made at the police headquarters was not true [i.e. was obtained by torture or threats].

Did you go to the railway-station with the idea of assassinating the Governor-General?—No; a Christian would not make an attempt to kill a man.

Did you contribute ¥200 towards the fund for purchasing revolvers?—No, I did not. A man like me who can hardly afford to buy a box of matches could not give away such sums of money.

Did you ever discuss the conspiracy with anybody?—No.

Do you know of any foreigners who assisted the plans of the conspirators?—No.

Were you ever told by Mr. McCune that he would assist and protect you in every way, as missionaries were never interfered with in any country?—No.

Do you know that Kim Il-chon has said in this Court that you went to the railway-station with a revolver hidden under your clothes? Kim is known to be crazy.

Chuen mission school, who denied the usual charges, and said he was not present at any meeting of conspirators.

By the Court: Why did you admit all these facts at the preliminary examination?—If the police were to go down Chong-no (one of the busiest streets in Seoul), indiscriminately arrest a number of the passers-by, and then "examine" them by putting them to torture, I am sure they would soon "confess" to having taken part in a plot.

Three more prisoners were examined before the Court rose,—two of them students of the mission school, named Paik Mongyang and Paik Il-chin. Both denied being members of the New People's Society. They admitted having gone to Syen Chuen railway-station, but not with any ulterior motive. Paik Il-chin denied having buried a box of revolvers on a hill at the instruction of Mr. McCune. The admission to this effect and other "confessions" made at the police headquarters were obtained by torture, said accused.

Cha Kiun-sul, aged 24, a teacher in the primary school at Syen Chuen, said he had been told about the New People's Society a few years ago, the object of which body, he understood, was to arouse patriotic feelings among the Koreans. Accused approved of that object. He knew nothing of any change in the aims and object of the Society. It was not true that he had approved a suggestion to assassinate the Governor-General. He told the police that he had taken a small knife with him when he went to the railway-station to meet Count Terauchi, and it was probably this knife which had been represented to the Court by the police as a sword about a foot long. It was untrue that he carried a sword. It was not true that he intended to shoot the Governor-General at the railway-station, and that he did not do so because no one else fired.

With the conclusion of the examination of this prisoner, the proceedings were adjourned.

#### FIFTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

##### STORY OF DESPERATE PRISONER'S ATTEMPTED SUICIDE.

SEOUL, July 4.

Yesterday was the fifth day of this case, and although one day's proceedings are very much like another's, the space

#### A CHALLENGE TO THE POLICE.

The next man to be examined was Kim Ik kyom, aged 25, a graduate of the Syen

set apart for the public is fully occupied, and about 200 Koreans and a dozen foreigners closely follow the examination of the accused. Every Korean—man, woman, and boy—is carefully searched before being admitted through the narrow gateway into the Court compound, and on leaving the compound each Korean is stamped on the back of the hand with a rubber stamp for identification purposes. Should this mark be erased, he is refused re-admittance. The exterior and interior of the Court is still closely guarded, though not quite so strictly, perhaps, as on the first day of the trial, but it is interesting to note that all the police and warders on duty in and about the Court are, without exception, Japanese. Yesterday's proceedings were of the usual character as far as the general denials of former "confessions" are concerned, but were enlivened on several occasions by some strong protests by the accused against their treatment during the preliminary examination.

The first prisoner examined yesterday was a young man named Hong Kiu-mum, aged 25, formerly a student at the Syen Chuen mission school, who said in answer to the Court that he first heard of the New People's Society on the occasion of his examination at the police headquarters. He denied having gone to Syen Chuen railway-station in September, October, and on November 27th, 1910, but admitted going on November 28th to welcome the Governor-General. He knew absolutely nothing of any meetings of conspirators, nor of Mr. McCune having delivered an inflammatory speech to the students in his school. Accused said his "confession" to the police that he had gone to the railway-station several times armed with a five-chambered revolver, and that he was one of a party of students selected to carry out the assassination, was due to the torture he had suffered at the hands of the police.

#### A PASSAGE OF ARMS BETWEEN JUDGE AND PRISONER.

A sturdily-built man named Yi Yong hyok, aged 26, was next examined, and in reply to the Court he said that about five years ago he studied at the Syen Chuen mission school for about a year. Since then he had been working as a farmer, and now had property worth about ¥2,000. When asked if he had

joined the New People's Society he replied—in a loud voice—that he had not, and with equal emphasis he denied having gone to the railway-station with a revolver, or having given ¥200 to Kim Il-chom (the crazy would-be assassin) through a third party to buy revolvers when Kim went to Port Arthur with the object of seeing An, the assassin of Prince Ito, who was then under arrest.

The Presiding Judge: You deny these facts, but they are already established by the evidence of Kim Il-chom and Yang Chom-mining, and by others.

Accused: I should like to see that evidence.

Judge (smiling): The evidence of Kim and Yang is more than satisfactory.

Accused: I do not think so, sir. The best evidence, if I be allowed to produce it, will probably be my own diary, which must contain an entry to the effect if I really gave this money to these men.

Judge (shouting): Stop this nonsense!

In reply to further questions by the Court, accused denied having managed the affairs of the New People's Society at Syen Chuen, and said Yang Chom-mining was not in a position to prove the contrary. The statement that Ok Kwan-pin came to Syen Chuen about November 15th, 1910, to inform the members of the Society that the Governor-General was coming, and that accused was appointed by the members to the revolver-collecting committee was untrue. Ok was entirely unknown to accused, and if anyone had given testimony to the contrary, it must have been forced by torture inflicted by the police. Finally, accused denied having plotted against Count Teranchi with Lyu Tong-sol in September last year.

#### PRISONER'S ATTEMPT AT SUICIDE.

An elderly man named Yi Chang-suk, connected with the administration of a Christian church at Kwaksan, North Pyongan-do, in reply to questions, said he had two sons, one of whom was among those accused of being concerned in the "conspiracy." The other had been away from Korea for a long time, but had recently returned, and was now in Seoul. He had gone away because of his aversion to study. Accused denied having joined the New People's Society, or having urged his sons to join to "help the cause of their country." He knew nothing of the "conspiracy," had not given ¥300 towards

the fund for purchasing revolvers, and had not gone to the railway-station armed with a revolver. His "confessions" to this effect to the police were forced by torture, and he thought the "evidence" against him given by Yang Chom-miung and others must also have been obtained by torture. It was impossible that three revolvers could have been found in his house, and he emphatically denied all the questions put as to his alleged visits to the station to assassinate the Governor-General. It was out of the question that a man of his age would attempt such a thing, and however "barbarous" the Koreans were supposed to be, he did not and could not think of committing such a crime.

By the Court: How did you get that ugly scar? (pointing to a scar on the front of accused's throat)—I could not stand the examination [i.e. the torture] into the "conspiracy," which preyed upon my feeble mind to such an extent that I at last decided it would be better to die rather than expose myself to further disgrace and pain. One day I found a sword in a room adjoining that in which I and others of the accused were being examined at the police headquarters, and taking advantage of the carelessness of the warden in charge, I seized the weapon and stabbed myself in the throat with the object of committing suicide.

Was it not because you knew you were guilty of the charge of conspiracy, and expected to be sentenced to death, that you decided to die by your own hands rather than be executed?—No, not at all. But I am sorry to have now to listen in open Court to the falsehoods I told to the police to escape further torture.

We cannot understand that you attempted to kill yourself because you told lies, which sounds illogical. But if you tried to kill yourself because you thought you would be executed when your guilt was established, it would seem reasonable enough. Was not this the real motive for your rash act?—No, it was not so.

Then your explanation of the scar on your throat is utter nonsense.—I have told you what was in my own mind.

No, you seem to have said what you did not have in mind. It looks manly and gallant for one to breath his last on the scaffold when his attempt made for the sake of his own country becomes

known and results in his arrest. But you were apparently afraid of this, were you not?—Not at all. I am rather in the opinion that I should cut a figure in the world if I was killed on the scaffold if I were really responsible for the conspiracy.

The next five prisoners examined were all students of the Syen Chuen mission school—Yi Chai-heui aged 30; Kim Yong-syon, aged 21; Syon Oo-hun, aged 22; Kim San-to, aged 21; Yi Chai-yun, aged 19; and Cha Yang-chun, aged 25. All these young men positively denied any connection with or knowledge of the "conspiracy," though they admitted having been at Syen Chuen when Count Terauchi stopped at the railway-station in 1910; their object in going to the station was to welcome the Governor-General. They were unarmed.

#### PRISONER'S IMPASSIONED PROTEST.

Cho Mun-paik, aged 24, in business at Gensan as a druggist, was next examined. He informed the Court, in reply to questions, that he had studied at the Syen Chuen mission school, but was not a member of the New People's Society. He had expressed approval of the principles of another Society which, however, he was not aware was identical with the Sin Min Hoi, a secret society; nor did he know that there were many other similar bodies all bearing different names but all connected with the New People's Society. On being asked whether he had admitted that these societies were identical with the New People's Society, the accused, in very excited tones, made a long and impassioned statement, despite the Presiding Judge's remarks that he need not make such a lengthy address. Although the prisoner made such a long statement, the interpreter's version of it all was simply that accused had admitted that the Society which he joined was identical with the New People's Society, owing to the fact that he could not endure the torture inflicted upon him by the police. The examination then proceeded:—

By the Court: Were you ever told by anybody that at every one of the schools controlled by foreigners or under their influence there was a branch of the New People's Society, all under different names, in order to avoid attracting official attention?—No.

Did you hear that the object of the Sin Min Hoi was to assassinate the Gov-

ernor-General and other high officials:—I did not.

Did you discuss plans for the assassination of Count Terauchi with An Taikuk at Pyong-yang about October 1910?—I did not.

Did you attend a meeting there on November 24th, 1910?—No; I was away from the city at that time.

A number of other questions were asked, all of which were strongly denied and the examination continued:—

You now deny all these facts, but did you not admit that you went to Syen Chuen station armed with a revolver?—Yes, I did make such a statement, but under torture.

Accused, speaking in a very loud voice, went on to describe at length the torture to which he was subjected. As he did so, he held up his left hand, and twisted his body about. The interpreter briefly explained that accused said he had to "confess" as he could not bear the torture.

By the Court: Why did you say at the preliminary examination that you did have evil intention upon the life of the Governor-General, but could not carry out the plans owing to the strict precautions taken to guard the Governor-General?—I had to say so, because of the unbearable torture.

Did you not also admit this fact at the Procurator's Office? Moreover, the fact that you were at Pyong-yang at the time mentioned is proved by the evidence of witnesses who are now accused in this case.—I did "confess" at the Procurator's Office, because I was told by one of the officials that if I did not I should be sent back to the police headquarters. The witnesses who are mentioned must have given their evidence in similar circumstances.

#### JUDICIAL PLEASANTRY.

The next man examined was Kang Pong-oo, aged 23, a mechanic employed by an industrial concern owned by Yi Seung-hun. The Presiding Judge asked if he lived in the same house as "the man with the big voice," referring to the prisoner whose examination was just concluded. Accused said he did not; he lived in the dormitory of the company for which he worked. The Judge ordered accused to hold up his right hand.

#### A QUESTION OF DIGITS.

By the Court: How did you come to lose the ring finger on that hand?—I

have always been a poor man, and had to earn by my own labour the money to pay for my school studies. I used to work all day, and study at night. It was this circumstance which led me to cut off this finger about five years ago at the night school in token of my resolution to study.

Did about 17 other young men also cut off a finger each in the same way?—Yes.

This could not have been done as a token of your resolution to carry on laborious studies. If that was the case, you would not want to cut off a finger, but would certainly want six or seven more fingers, if such a thing were possible. The real motive which you young men had in mind was a sort of pledge to unite yourselves firmly in the cause of the Han dynasty. Is that not the case?—This was done about five years ago, and previous to the annexation of Korea. How could it be possible for us to have anticipated the annexation? I think it only reasonable that we young men should want to do what we could for the country after having studied.

#### ANOTHER PLEA OF ALIBI.

Did you meet members of the New People's Society at the Taikuk Soh-kwan, Pyong-yang, in November 1910, and discuss plans for assassinating the Governor-General?—I never heard of the Society before being taken to the police headquarters. I did not meet the members at Pyong-yang, for I was not in the city at that time.

One of the others who cut off a finger has given evidence that you were seen at the meeting in Pyong-yang.—I know nothing about the meeting. I was at that time in the country preaching the Gospel.

#### MORE COMPLAINTS OF TORTURE.

Paik Nam-chung, a young farmer, aged 28, said he had never heard of the secret society called the Sin Min Hoi, had never consulted anybody about a plot to assassinate the Governor-General, and had not gone to the Syen Chuen railway station, armed with a revolver and accompanied by others, to kill Count Terauchi. The statement he had made to the police to the effect that he did go to the station to kill the Count, but was too frightened to fire when the opportunity came was untrue, and was forced from him by torture. The "evidence" of other prisoners supporting

his original "confession" must also have been obtained by torture. In loud tones accused declared that he had been severely beaten by the police to such an extent that he could endure it no longer, and he felt the pain even now.

The Presiding Judge remarked that he did not look as though he was suffering any pain.

To further questions by the Court, accused replied that he had never obtained money from wealthy people in his neighborhood by threatening them with a revolver. Shown a revolver by the Presiding Judge, accused admitted it was his property, and also identified a pocket electric-lamp as being his. Accused reiterated that he had not used the revolver and lamp in entering rich people's houses and obtaining money from them, but he had "confessed" to this effect at the police station because he could not bear the torture.

At this stage of the proceedings the Court adjourned for tiffin.

The first prisoner to be examined when the Court re-assembled in the afternoon was O Taik-uni, aged 31, engaged in a common school at Syen Chuen. He denied having joined the New People's Society, and said he had not consulted anyone about making raids upon the houses of wealthy people in November, 1910, with a view to obtaining money for the Society. A number of other questions of the stereotyped character regarding the alleged arrangement of plans for the assassination of Count Terauchi, and attending the railway-station at Syen Chuen with the alleged object of carrying out those plans, were denied by the accused, who admitted that he had "confessed" all these "facts" to the police during his examination at headquarters, but the statements then made by him were not true. It was not true that he had gone to Pyong-yang with the young brother of the man who assassinated Prince Ito. It was impossible, said accused, that he could have gone to the railway station on the day the Governor-General passed through, as he was teaching in his school that day, and if he had gone to the station the fact could thus be easily ascertained.

The Presiding Judge, with a smile, told accused that he need not trouble about that point.

In reply to further questions, the accused said that he had "confessed" to having at first decided to go to the rail

way station armed with a sword, but had later on determined to take a revolver. This "confession," however, was false, and was made under torture.

#### SUGGESTIONS ABOUT BOMBS.

The next man examined was Pyen Kong-yul, aged 21, who said he graduated at the Yangsil school, Pyong-yang, some three years ago. He knew No Chung-héun intimately, but he had not joined the New People's Society at No's suggestion, nor had he attempted to obtain money by threats from a wealthy family.

By the Court: Do you know anyone who was very clever in making explosives?—No.

Do you know that a man who made bombs for the New People's Society, while carrying a number of these infernal machines, fell down, and the bombs exploded, the man was killed?—I do not.

Did you go to Whanghai-do with Kim Kwi about November 16th, 1910, and meet the brother of the man who assassinated Prince Ito, who suggested that you should make raids upon the wealthy people of the district in order to get money for the establishment of a military school for young Koreans, which was one of the objects of the New People's Society?—I did not.

Did not Kim Kwi then inform you that plans had been prepared at Seoul to kill the Governor-General at Syen Chuen on his way north, whereupon you gave up the idea of making raids upon the rich people in your district and proceeded to Syen Chuen with 20 men? It is not true. I made a statement to this effect at the police headquarters, but it was not based on fact.

You left An-ak with seven others for Syen Chuen by way of Chinnamoo on about November 23—I did not, although I said so at the police station.

Accused also denied the truth of a number of other statements made by him to the police and before the Prosecutor. It is unnecessary to give these questions and answers, since they are of the same character as those already put to practically every one of the accused.

Another young man, La Seungklu, aged 21, a porcelain dealer and surveyor, informed the Court that he had studied at the Kamlung School. He had a branch establishment at Roson-do, where he had a signboard put up informing the



public of his profession as a surveyor. He denied that this signboard was merely a subterfuge, and was meant to indicate that members of the New People's Society could assemble there as freely as they liked. Then came the usual series of questions regarding accused's alleged acquaintance with the "conspiracy" and the conspirators, to all of which he replied in the negative.

By the Court: A party of conspirators assembled at the Syen Chuen mission school on November 27th, 1910, and on the following day again proceeded to the railway-station armed with revolvers. When the Governor-General alighted and walked down the platform, he was so closely guarded and surrounded that his face could not be distinguished, and his uniform was similar to that worn by the large number of military officers who walked with him. Therefore the scheme of the conspirators could not be carried out. In the evening, at a meeting held at the mission school, Yi Seung-hun vigorously abused the conspirators for their failure to carry out their scheme. Is not this what occurred?—No; nothing anything like this happened to my knowledge.

Did you break into several houses and steal money for the purpose of using it to meet the expense of carrying out the conspiracy?—I did not.

#### TORTURE-WRUNG CONFESSION.

The next accused, An Syong-che, aged 24, said he had studied at a school of which Yi Seung-hun was the head. He had not heard Yi remark that Korea would not do in its present position, and that something must be done for the sake of the country. It was not true that accused had gone to a certain place to watch the movements of the Governor-General, nor did he go to Syen Chuen station with a number of others to shoot Count Terauchi. He had, however, "confessed" all this to the police under torture.

#### A MISSING NOSE.

La Ping-kiu was re-called and shown a framed portrait of Yi Wan-yong. The Court having asked whom the picture represented, he said it was quite clear who the man was, as his name was given at the bottom of the picture.

The Court asked La why he had rubbed off the nose of the portrait, to which accused replied that his children must have done it by wetting their fingers in

their mouths and rubbing their hands on the picture.

#### "DANGEROUS THOUGHTS" IN A NOTE BOOK.

The examination of the next accused, Kim Syong-haing, aged 23, was very interesting, and came as a relief to the monotonous repetition of charges and flat denials. Kim is an artisan employed in a porcelain works at Chyongju, and he denied the usual string of charges of complicity in the "conspiracy." He said it was absolutely impossible for him to have been at Syen Chuen railway-station with a party of other men armed with swords or revolvers, since he was at that time in quite another place. Neither had he been concerned in a scheme to destroy a certain gold-mine with dynamite. He had "confessed" all this to the police, however, but as the result of torture. Accused having identified a small note-book as being his property, the examination proceeded:—

By the Court: Here you have made interesting entries to the effect that "The strong prey upon the weak," and that "The superiors win and the inferiors are defeated." Another entry says "To preserve the national rights and save my brethren is a duty which is mine," and another reads "Be ye studious to learn practical knowledge with all your mind." Another is "Think with a warm heart of the Han Dynasty," and another reads "Forget not to hold up high the flag of Independence, and rejoice, shouting Hurrah!" What do these passages mean?—I have copied them down as I heard them from another man.

Here is another entry of a song, which says in effect:—"Let us enjoy the feast of Independence again. . . . Let your tongue sing the song of Triumph, and let the Bell of Liberty be rung!"—I have merely noted these phrases, but have never sung them.

Here is another entry:—"O you young men of our times! Let your minds be spurred on, and unite all your energies to re-build you Fatherland deep."—I wrote that myself, but I have never sung it.

The Presiding Judge (smiling): We have now a song of Patriotism, in which you urge 30 million of your young countrymen to push on bravely, even with the blood running down.—Every country in the world has its songs, and these are nothing more than national

songs. I copied the words, but did not sing them, as I knew they would be considered harmful to the preservation of peace.

Has a man at Pyongyang composed all these songs?—I do not think so.

#### REMARKABLE WORDS FROM JUDGE.

The Presiding Judge: I am not surprised that a man who could find enjoyment in taking a note of these songs should have been concerned in planning this present conspiracy. It is only to be expected that such a man as you would make inflammatory speeches at meetings. —I have never had such a thing in my mind.

It would not sound well for a man like you to say that you had to confess certain facts under torture at the hands of the police.—I have not done anything like the acts I am alleged to be guilty of.

How would it be if you, who brood over such thoughts, would confess to taking part in the conspiracy?—I can not confess what I have never thought of.

Just confess your own complicity, without implicating others, won't you? —It is not true.

You need not worry so much about it, as it is evident you do from your bloodshot eyes. Far better relieve your bosom by confession.—I have nothing to confess.

But you ought to have. There is no necessity for you to say that you were forced to make statements under torture about matters of which you knew nothing. You need not worry, if you now tell us what you know.—I know nothing.

As the accused bowed and retired to his place among the other prisoners, the Presiding Judge laughed.

#### THE FIRST SUSPECT ARRESTED.

The next prisoner examined was Yi Chai-yun, aged 21, who said he had no religious beliefs. The usual questions about joining the New People's Society and going to Syen Chuen railway-station with the object of assassinating Count Terachi were put to the prisoner by the Court, and denied, accused stating that he was at home on November 27th and 28th, and therefore could not have been at the railway-station.

By the Court: Were not you and your party abused by Yi when you returned from the railway station, having failed to carry out your plans?—No, it is not true. Moreover, I do not know Yi.

Did you not admit all these facts in the Procurator's office?—I did, but under intimidation.

You were the first man concerned in this case to be examined, and it was because you confessed that this affair came to light, and the present charge was brought by the Procurator against the men now accused. It is a lie to say that you confessed owing to torture inflicted by the police.—No statement was made by me on my own initiative; I merely acquiesced in the statements put to me.

#### STUDENT OR SPY ?

The next man brought up for examination was Choi Chu-sik, aged 20, formerly a student at the Kamiung school at Syen Chuen. Since leaving, he said, he had been studying in Seoul, but not at the expenses of Yi Seung-hun, as he had confessed to the police. He did not know Yi Wan-yong nor Yi Yong-ku (officials in the former Korean Government). He had not assisted Yi Chai-myong in his attempt to assassinate the former Korean Premier, although he was tortured at the police headquarters to admit that he did.

By the Court: Was it not merely as a subterfuge that you pretended to go to Seoul for study, and you really went to act as a spy for Yi Chai-myong and the others of your party in order to keep watch on the movements of prominent officials in Seoul?—No, that is not the case.

Did you not inform Yi Chai-myong that the Korean Premier and another Korean Minister Yi Yongku were going to the Roman Catholic church one day? —I did not. Is it not most unreasonable to suppose that one like myself who does not know the faces of these **high** officials could have pointed them out to other people?

The Presiding Judge: Does your statement sound reasonable? I can tell you that Kim Chan-o was also engaged to point out the prominent Korean officials to Yi Chai-myong, but when the attack on the Premier was made, Kim was driven away by the police.—I said that at the police headquarters, but it is a sheer fabrication.

But the fact is also evident from the record of the examination of Yi Chai-myong in the Procurator's Office.—If such evidence was obtained, it must also have been elicited by torture.

Have you not since then been scheming the assassination of the Governor-

General,—a plot which was further stimulated by the announcement of the annexation of Korea?—I have not.

You agreed to Yi Seung-hun's proposal to attack the Governor-General, and carrying a revolver you left Nap Chyongjong for Syen Chuen on November 27th, 1910, and you went to the railway station with the intention of killing the Governor-General; is that not so?—I was forced to say so at the police-station, but it is not true.

You went on to the platform with other members of the New People's Society. When the Governor-General arrived he walked down the platform along the files of people who had come to welcome him, and you and your party were there pretending to receive him with good will. As there were a number of military officers all walking together, you could not tell which was the Governor-General, and moreover, as certain men who it had been pre-arranged were to fire first had not done so, you missed the chance you had of assassinating the Governor-General and so the whole plot failed. Is that so?—I did not go to Syen Chuen that day, which fact can be established if the Court will interrogate the people in my house.

Is it true that you have frequently robbed wealthy people on the pretext of raising "war expenses" for the New People's Society?—It is not a fact, but I was forced to say so by being put to torture.

#### COUNSEL'S PROTEST AGAINST INACCURATE INTERPRETATION OF EVIDENCE.

At this point Mr. Chang Dow, a Korean barrister appearing for the defence, called the attention of the Court to the manner in which the evidence was being dealt with by the Court interpreter. Counsel, who addressed the Court in Japanese, said that the interpretation should be more complete and more close to the original remarks made by the prisoners. Many of the accused in the course of their examinations had already explained to the Court how they had been forced to make statements which were described as "confessions" in the official records of the examinations which had been prepared at the police headquarters and in the Procurator's Office. The Court interpreter, however, in rendering the statements of the prisoners into Japanese, had minimised the nature of their complaints; for example, the words *gomon serarete* (tortured) were interpreted in the same sense as *semerarete* (pressed or teased).

#### THE JUDGE'S REPLY.

The Presiding Judge replied very briefly, and in a tone suggestive of rebuke, to counsel's protest. The Judge said:—"Do you wish to complain about the manner in which the evidence is being interpreted? Is it not all right, since it is practically the same thing? Well, let us be satisfied with it."

#### MORE ABOUT TORTURE.

Kim Yong-wha, aged 30, a tobacco dealer in Kasan district, North Pyongang, denied the usual string of questions about plotting the assassination and proceeding to Syen Chuen railway-station. The statement made by him to the police that he laid hold of the revolver which was hidden under his clothes, but did not fire because of the close guard kept round the Governor-General, was wrung from him as the result of torture by the police. Upon being informed by the Court that other prisoners had confessed these facts, accused replied that they, too, must have been forced to make such statements by torture. Asked by the Court how he knew about others being tortured, accused said he had been told by them.

Choi Syong-min, aged 48, a farmer from North Pyongyang, made the usual denials, and asserted that he had been badly beaten at the police headquarters to make him confess having gone to Syen Chuen railway station armed with a dagger, but the statements put in his mouth were not true.

By the Court: At a meeting held at the Kamiung school Yi Seung-hun was greatly displeased at your failure to carry out the planned attack, and abused you as being a man who only knew how to eat your meals. You, being a man of spirit, resented this abuse, and replied in an offensive way, asking what Yi himself did at Syen Chuen. Yi then became apologetic, and said he only wanted to ascertain your mind about the failure. Is that so?—I cannot deny having admitted all this at the Procurator's Office, but it is not true.

Such a story as this could not be fabricated by anybody, could it?—I do not know.

The last man examined yesterday was Choi Che-kiu, 30 years of age, and employed at the Kamiung school. Four years ago, he said, he was studying in Tokyo at the expense of Yi Seung-hun. He denied the stereotyped judicial

questions about discussing the alleged plot to assassinate Count Terauchi, and denied going to Syen Chuen station. The story he told the police to the effect that on seeing the Governor-General walking along the platform he (accused) made up his mind to shoot, but his hand trembled so much that he could not grasp the revolver, and so lost his courage, was not true; he had told this story because he was beaten by the police.

## SIXTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### BEATINGS AND TORTURE.

#### ALLEGED SERIOUS THREAT BY POLICE.

#### MORE "DANGEROUS" THOUGHTS" IN A DIARY.

SEOUL, July 6.

The Court did not sit on the "Glorious Fourth," so that the sixth day's hearing of this case was held yesterday. There were again about 200 people in Court listening to the proceedings, or trying to, for it is very evident that not many can closely follow what is going on. The Judges are seated at one end of the courtroom, and the public at the other end, with the 123 prisoners, the barristers' seats, and the newspaper correspondents in between. When a prisoner is called up for examination he is taken up from the middle of the courtroom to a spot right in front of the Judges, and still further away from the public and the Presiding Judge frequently starts putting questions before the accused has taken up his position in front of the Bench. The Judge addresses his questions mainly to the interpreter, who having obtained a reply from the prisoner, interprets it back to the Judge. Except to those who are quite close to the Bench, and can hear what passes between the Judge and the accused through the interpreter, it must be very difficult to follow the proceedings at all closely. Even for me—and my seat is quite close to the place where the barristers are sitting it requires constant and close attention to hear the questions put to, and the answers made by, the interpreter. Among those in Court yesterday were about fifteen foreigners—most of them missionaries, and among those present were two ladies.

The proceedings commenced at about 9.30 yesterday morning with the examination of Yi Chi-won, aged 32, described as a merchant, and who said he had no religious convictions. In reply to the usual questions, accused denied all knowledge of the alleged conspiracy, and said a merchant would not be likely to become implicated in the affairs of a Society whose alleged object was the assassination of the Governor-General. Accused said he knew Yi Seung-hun, but had never been asked by him to join the New People's Society. Accused also denied having gone to Syen Chuen, via Chyongju, in November 1910 with the intention of assassinating the Governor-General, but said he was forced to admit this and other statements as the result of torture.

#### ALLEGED REMARKABLE THREAT BY POLICE.

The next prisoner, Tak Chang-ho, aged 34, denied knowing anything about the Society, or of Yi Seung-hun's alleged invitation to join him in carrying out the Society's alleged object of killing the Governor-General. Accused having denied the usual suggestions of guilt conveyed by questions, the Court asked why he had admitted these statements to be true at the police headquarters.

Accused replied that he had admitted the charges made against him in the first place because he was put under torture by the police. The reason why he also admitted these charges in the Procurator's Office was that when he was taken there for further examination, a police officer told him that if he failed to make the same admissions to the Procurator which he made to the police, he would be killed, the police officer suggestively reminding him that there were 30,000 policemen and gendarmes in Korea.

Shown by the Court a revolver, accused denied that it was his, but said he had "admitted" to the police that he had borrowed it from another man, and had taken it to Syen Chuen station to "welcome" the Governor-General. This statement, however, was a complete fabrication.

An elderly farmer, Yi Chun-yong, aged 55, denied having heard from Yi Seung-hun anything about a plot for the assassination of the Governor-General in November 1910. He had no revolver in his house, nor had he given one to An Chyong-che because he thought it dangerous for an old man to keep such a

weapon. The customary questions as to accused having gone to Syen Chuen with a party of "conspirators" were put, and accused denied all knowledge of any such circumstances. The "admissions" he had made at the police station were false.

#### UNIVERSITY LAW STUDENT'S EVIDENCE.

The next man examined was Im Hyong-wha, aged 34, who studied in Tokyo at the Nippon Daigaku (Law College) for about a year. Accused said he knew Japanese, but preferred to be examined in Korean.

By the Court: Was not your trip to Japan taken with the object of observing political conditions there, the story of you going to study being merely to cover your real intentions?—No; that is not so. I attended college regularly, as may be seen from the entries in my diary.

Did you not go to Japan at the request of Yi Seunghun?—No. I have never been favoured in any way by Yi.

What did you do after returning from Tokyo to Korea?—I was engaged as superintendent of the Kamiung School, at Nap Chyongjong.

Was it not while you were in Tokyo that you joined the New People's Society?—No.

Did you not confess at the Procurator's Office that you joined that body in the circumstances mentioned?—I confessed nothing, but I said that if it was stated in the official record of my examination that I had confessed, such "confession" was obtained by torture, and I was not bound by it.

At the end of November 1910 did you call a meeting of people at the Kamiung School, together with Yi Seung-hun, and make a speech in which you referred to the coming of the Governor-General to Syen Chuen, and said that for the sake of the country he should be killed there?—Nothing of the kind ever happened to my knowledge.

In reply to further questions, accused denied having gone to Syen Chuen railway-station with the object of killing Count Teranuchi, but was unable to recognise him; accused also denied having admitted this to the Procurator. He denied having urged members of the Society to break into the houses of the wealthy, and denied a number of other suggestions made by the Court. Accused said that if evidence to the contrary had been obtained from members of the So-

cieté at New Wijn, Chyongju, and Syen Chuen, it was altogether wrong, and he had heard nothing of it, even at the Procurator's Office.

#### THE JUDGE AND THE ALLEGATION OF TORTURE.

Could there have been some other Im Hyong-wha, and not you, who confessed to all these things?—I had to admit these statements at the Procurator's Office, but I did not make any statements myself.

Is it possible that a man like you, who has studied at a Law College, could say things he did not mean while under torture?—I do not think it impossible.

Was it not because these statements were statements of fact that you admitted them?—No, they are not facts. The real truth is that I was subjected to torture for several days, during which time I felt that I was about to breathe my last.

That is no excuse for a man who has studied law. These statements of yours which are on record are the real facts, are they not?—I have already told you the truth about the matter.

Is this [a pocket electric-lamp] yours?—Yes. I was asked by an acquaintance to dispose of some among the people in my village in June last year.

Is this lamp one of those you were instructed by your leader to distribute among the members of your secret Society, so that they might use them when breaking into the houses of wealthy people to obtain money?—Certainly not.

Whose is this [a new revolver]?—It is not mine; it belongs to my brother.

Did you not say at the police headquarters that this weapon was yours, but that you had entrusted it to your brother?—No, I did not say so.

You took this weapon with you to Syen Chuen to carry out your scheme of assassinating the Governor-General, but as the attempt failed you took it to your brother, did you not?—No. The truth is that about eight years ago, when our neighbourhood was infested by robbers, my brother—who was rather well-to-do—bought this revolver for defence against possible thieves. The leather sack containing a number of cartridges was also my brother's.

Is this [another and larger revolver] your brother's, too?—I do not know.

Did you not say at the police headquarters that your brother was a very rich man, and so he bought several revolvers at the time robbers were about

in his district?—I did say so, but it was a lie. My brother had only one revolver, as I have told you.

But your brother remembers this large revolver, and surely you must also recognise it.—No.

Why did you fail to report to the police that there were firearms in the house?—I did not know that there was such a regulation; I was never informed of it.

MORE "DANGEROUS THOUGHTS" IN A DIARY.

Is this your diary, kept while you were in Tokyo?—Yes.

According to this, you delivered an address to your people in Tokyo about the independence of Korea.—If it is entered there, I suppose I did so.

On October 26th, 1909, you have an entry to the following effect:—"At 5.30 p.m. I received an 'extra' of a certain paper announcing that Prince Ito had been assassinated. I rejoice, but I grieve." What do you mean by saying that you first rejoiced, and then grieved?

I cannot say now what thoughts entered my head when I wrote those words.

Again, on December 21st of the same year, you mention having received a telegram from Korea at 7 p.m., stating that Yi Chai-myong had stabbed a "great traitor," Yi Wan-yong, and you add these words:—"What Korean young men should do is to follow the self-sacrificing example of Yi Chai-myong.—This idea I got from the *Tokyo Asahi*, which referred to the self-sacrificing idea of the assailant.

The *Asahi* could not have written such an abominable thing. You must have written this as your own impression at the time.—No, I do not think so. But even if the passage was written, as the Court suggests, to express my own impressions at the time, I did not mean that I myself would follow Yi's example.

You must have meant that at that time, at any rate, you would follow his example.—No. Everybody who keeps a diary jots down their impressions on various matters after reading the newspapers, but it does not necessarily mean that one really means to execute the ideas that are noted.

Did you also make this entry about remembering the old Chinese King who brooded over a scheme for driving the invader out of his country?—Yes.

Here again, on March 26th, 1910, you have this passage:—"The *Asahi* reports that An Chung-heun, the assassin of Prince Ito, is to be ex-

ecuted to-day. . . . The man and his deed demand the uniform sympathy of the 20 million people of Korea. . . . The day became overcast as the morning advanced, as though the Heavens themselves grieve over the doomed man. . . . Young Koreans of to-day should succeed to the mind of An." Does this not mean that you had an idea of carrying out a scheme similar to that of An's?—I admit having written that passage, but I wish to explain the circumstances. No man, whatever his nationality, who stops to think about An and his act, can fail to see that—other questions apart—he did not carry out his scheme for his own selfish purposes. It was solely for the sake of his country that An did this daring thing—a fact which in itself is sufficient to stir the blood of a young man. It was probably in this way that my mind was stimulated at the time to such a degree that I was impelled to make that entry in my diary.

What were your thoughts on hearing of the assassination of Prince Ito?—I do not think I had any particular impressions at the time.

#### JUDICIAL ADVICE TO CONFESS.

It is quite evident, from the entries in this diary of yours that you had the idea of carrying out an act similar to that of the assassin of Prince Ito. That being so, it is only natural that you should have been thinking, since your return to Korea, of assassinating the Governor-General. In these circumstances your statement that you had to admit this and that because of the brutal treatment of the police, although you knew nothing about these things, sounds like a mere excuse. Did you not contemplate an attack on the life of the Governor-General?—I did not, and I have never admitted any of the alleged "facts" of my own accord.

It will be more advantageous for an educated man like you to tell the truth.—I sincerely thank the Court for its kind advice. I only want to state the real facts here in Court in the presence of people of several nationalities. I assure the Court that I have never entertained such an idea as that of assassinating the Governor-General.

The Court then read out a number of other passages from the diary, written while accused was in Tokyo. The passages referred to letters received from his brother, friends, and former pupils

whom he had taught at school in Korea. Among these passages were the following:—"Let us wash our disgrace and the humiliation we have suffered in the waters of the Pacific," and "Thing of independence, and study with an idea of patriotism." The Court observed that from these passages it appeared that accused had gone to Japan in order to spy out the political situation, and not for study.

In reply, accused said that these passages were nothing more than his own impressions, noted at the time.

#### WHOLESALE DENIALS.

The next four prisoners examined, Pak Sang-hun, aged 29; Yi Hyong-cho, aged 28; Im Pyong-haing, aged 22; Paik Chion-hyong, aged 48; and Kim Eung-pong, aged 25, all denied having joined the New People's Society, and having gone to Syen Chuen railway-station on November 27th, 1910, with the object of assassinating the Governor-General.

The last of the accused examined before the tiffin interval was Yi Yong-wha, formerly principal and superintendent of the Kamiung school, of which an American missionary, Mr. Roberts, was now the principal. In reply to questions by the Court, accused denied that he was a member of the New People's Society, and denied having gone to the Syen Chuen railway station to assassinate the Governor-General.

#### ALLEGED BEATINGS BY THE POLICE.

Asked by the Court why he had admitted all these statements at the police-station, accused said he had to, owing to the torture inflicted upon him. The evidence said to have been given against him by other prisoners, added accused, must have been obtained in a similar way. He knew Baron Yun by sight, but had never been spoken to by him in regard to the conspiracy. He had admitted at the police station that Baron Yun had told him to arrange matters relating to the plot in North Pyongan-do, but he was told to "confess" this by a police officer, and was beaten because he persisted in denying the statement.

By the Court: Are you the ringleader of this party in Nap Chyongjong? You appear to be from every point of view.—No. I was originally a merchant, and am not interested in things of that character.

Are these [several pocket electric lamps] your property, and did you buy

them to distribute among your party so that they might use them in breaking into the houses of wealthy people to rob them?—They are not mine; they are the property of the school. We bought them in June last year as specimens.

Were these lamps bought by you and Yang Chom-miung?—I accompanied him when he went to buy them; he bought 20, and I bought one.

Did you buy these lamps so that they could be used in the attempt on the life of the Governor-General?—No; a merchant could never have thought of such a dreadful thing.

At this stage the Court adjourned for tiffin.

The first man examined after the Court re-assembled was Kim Chau-o, aged 22, who told the Court that he had studied at the Kamiung school and at a school in Seoul. He denied having kept a watch on the movements of the former Korean Premier, and reported from time to time to a party of conspirators in Seoul, and that he was in Seoul as a spy and not as a student. It was not true that he had pointed out the Premier to his would-be assassin, Yi Chai-myong, when the former went to the Roman Catholic church in Seoul. Accused also denied being concerned in the present alleged conspiracy, and having gone to Syen Chuen railway-station on November 27th, 1910, with others with the intention of assassinating the Governor-General. Accused said that on the day in question he was attending his father, who was ill in bed.

The Court asked why accused had admitted complicity in the conspiracy when examined by the police, to which prisoner replied that he had to do so because he was tortured.

A teacher at the Kamiung school, named Yi Tai-kyong, aged 28, was next examined. He denied having joined the New People's Society. He had frequently seen Yi Seung-hun at the school, but had never spoken to him, nor had he ever heard Yi speak about any conspiracy. Accused did not know whether a meeting was held on November 24th, 1910, of all the local members of the New People's Society, at which it was decided that the Governor-General should be killed at Syen Chuen on the following 27th. He also denied having gone to Syen Chuen on the 27th with a party of others, with the object of killing the Governor-General. He had, however, admitted all these state-

ments to be true when examined by the police, but his "confessions" were untrue, and were obtained by torture.

#### HOW PRISONER'S STATEMENTS ARE "INTERPRETED."

The next four prisoners, Kim Ok-hyon, aged 28, Kim Pongsu, aged 34, Kim Yong-o, aged 49, and La Eul-su, aged 29, gave testimony to the same effect. Kim Yong-o, in reply to a question by the Court as to whether he had "confessed" his guilt at the police headquarters, made a very long statement, and in a very loud voice. By his various gestures I gathered that he was explaining the methods used by the police authorities in obtaining his "confession," but the interpreter's version of Kim's lengthy address was as simple as could be imagined, the laconic remark "Gomon!" (torture) being practically all that was said in explanation of the prisoner's statement.

#### CHRISTIAN PASTOR'S STORY OF POLICE INTIMIDATION.

The next prisoner called up for examination was Cho Tok-chan, aged 45, a Christian pastor from Chyongju. He said he knew Yi Seung-hun, but did not go to the Kamlung school in response to Yi's invitation in September 1910, nor was he told by Yi that he should toil not only for the Gospel but for the sake of his country. Accused also denied having met Yi at the Kamlung school to discuss the proposed assassination of the Governor-General, nor did he go to Syen Chuen railway-station on November 27th, 1910.

By the Court: Did you not admit these facts when you were questioned at the Procurator's Office?—I denied them at first, but I was so terrified by the glaring eyes and the threatening voice of the official in charge that at last I had to admit the charges. I am only a simple countryman, and I do not know whether this was in the police headquarters or the Procurator's Office. I do not know one from the other.

You are rather an important man, being a pastor. Is it possible that a man like you could be frightened by glaring eyes and an angry voice?—I was awfully worried by the police, and a timid countryman could not stand it, I assure you.

How is that others of the accused have given evidence against you?—No doubt because they were also subjected to torture by the police.

In reply to further questions, accused denied having gone to Syen Chuen railway-station with a revolver on November 27th and 28th, 1910. At that time he was preaching the Gospel at North Pyongan-do.

#### MORE JUDICIAL "WIT."

The Court remarked that according to the official investigation, accused's name was not recorded in the diary of any of the churches in the district mentioned as having been there on the days in question. The Court added that it was very strange to find a pastor telling a lie, and the accused would be named "the liar pastor."

#### "ADMISSIONS" OBTAINED BY BEATING.

Yi Myong-yong, who was next examined, said he had joined the New People's Society on the advice of Yi Seung-hun. He denied having stated at the police headquarters that Im Dom-yong, Choi Syong-chu, Paik Mong-kin, and himself were well-known leaders at Chyongju. He simply acknowledged the statements which were put to him by the authorities, as he had been beaten to force him to admit these statements. Accused was then questioned on the usual lines regarding attendance at meetings of "conspirators" and proceeding to the railway-station at Syen Chuen, and denied being concerned therein. Asked why he had told the police that he had been appointed on a committee of four persons to collect revolvers and money, accused said he was beaten by the police, so that he had to admit this. He added that on November 27th, 1910, when he was charged with having gone to Syen Chuen railway-station, he was in the country, a fact which could be proved by calling witnesses.

By the Court: On that very evening you and your party assembled at the Syen Chuen mission school, and were addressed by Yi Seung-hun, who said that the Governor-General was sure to come next day, and that you would all have to carry out your long-cherished scheme. This, Yi said, was the order of Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak, and their orders were the voice of the thirteen provinces of Korea. Yi then ordered certain men to proceed to Kwaksan and to Chongju to take charge of arrangements there in case the attempt at Syen Chuen failed. Do you remember this?—No; I was not at Syen Chuen at that time. I was up



country attending a ceremony at the graves of my ancestors.

#### PRISONER'S SARCASM.

You and your party reached Chyongju about 11 a.m. the day after this meeting, and—together with a party of students from the Sin-an school which was under the influence of the New People's Society—you went to the railway-station, all armed with some kind of weapon. The Governor-General's train came in, he alighted from his car, walked up to Choi Song-chu, who stood at the head of the party, and asked him if he spoke Japanese. Choi, you, and the others had been waiting for a good chance to carry out your designs, but you were handicapped by the Generals coming too close to you, and also by the strict guard that was kept over him. You missed your opportunity, for the Governor-General quickly returned to his car and the train moved out of the station. Do you remember this?—I understand that the Japanese police system is supposed to be one of the best in the world. Is it then possible that men—a whole company of men—armed with dangerous weapons, could have got past the police on to the station platform on such an occasion as this? The thing is impossible.

In reply to further questions, accused denied knowing Lyu Tong-sol, or having attempted to kill the Governor-General when he went to attend the ceremony at the opening of the Yalu bridge, and said he did not know whether Yi Chang-ho was among those alleged to have gone to Chyongju to carry out the plan of the conspirators.

#### How "CONFESSIONS" WERE OBTAINED.

The Court asked accused if he did not admit at the Procurator's Office that Yi was among those who went to Chyongju, and that the plan was to attack the Governor-General there. All the other accused connected with this particular attempt, added the Court, had given evidence to the same effect.

Accused, in reply, said he could not have been either at Chyongju or Kwaksan himself, as he was in another place, as already explained. As to his alleged "confession" to the police, he had not mentioned these "facts" himself at all, but had simply said "yes" to every question put to him by the official in charge of the examination. The real nature of his alleged "confession" could be ascertained if the Court would ex-

amine the police officers who examined him. Accused concluded by emphatically declaring his innocence.

Im Do-myong, aged 29, said he was a clerk in the Sin-an school at Chyongju conducted by Mr. Roberts. He admitted having been fined Y7 in the Chyongju Court, as representative of the school, for failing to obey an official order to close the school because it was not properly equipped and the accommodation was inadequate. He denied being a member of the New People's Society, of which he heard for the first time at the police headquarters.

#### How THE POLICE OBTAINED DETAILS OF THE "PLOT."

By the Court: You it was who first disclosed everything about the Chyongju affair and about the Society, without which evidence the police could not have obtained any details of the Society. Is that so?—Yes, but I was subjected to torture for three days, and was also beaten during that time. I spoke about this when I was examined in the Procurator's Office, but could not go back on the statements forced from me at the police headquarters, as the police strictly warned me to make the same statements before the Procurator.

On November 15th, 1910, you, with Choi Syong-chu and Hong Song-in, met at Syen Chuen at Yang Chom-miung's house, and discussed the plan for the assassination of the Governor-General. It was agreed that he should be attacked at certain stations along the line, so that if the attempt failed at one place, it might succeed in another.—I was not present at any such meeting, nor did I ever hear of such an arrangement being made.

You then went back to Chyongju, and afterwards came to Syen Chuen with Yi Seung-hun.—I denied this statement when it was first put to me, but being beaten by the police I had to admit it.

Accused also denied going back to Chyongju with a party of men from Kwaksan to prepare for carrying out the plot, and he begged the Court to question the gendarmerie at Syen Chuen more carefully as to his movements.

Yi Keun-taik, aged 28, a tall and rather handsome man, was next examined. He denied being a member of the New People's Society, though he was forced to admit that he was when the police examined him. Accused said he was ill during November, 1910, and therefore

could not have gone to Syen Chuen, as alleged. He had not given a sen to the alleged conspirators, nor had he collected Y500 or Y600 from a wealthy family at Kwaksan. He did not give any money to Yi Seung-hun to buy revolvers, nor was he given eight weapons. The customary questions as to being at the railway-station and attempting on the life of the Governor-General were put by the Court, and were all denied by the accused.

#### A BURIED REVOLVER.

By the Court: Is this [a five-chambered revolver] yours?—Yes, but I did not take it to Syen Chuen or to Chyongju, as alleged.

Is this [a small bag containing 16 cartridges] yours?—Yes, but I do not know how many cartridges are in it.

Have you ever given these things to your uncle to mind?—Yes.

These articles were dug up from the ground on a hill, where they had been buried in a deep hole, which your uncle admitted doing. Did you not ask him to do so for you, as you feared that if these things were kept in his house, they might be seized by the authorities?—No.

Is this [a swordstick] also yours, and did you also entrust this to your uncle?—It is mine, but I kept it in my own house.

In reply to further questions accused denied having taken these weapons to the railway-station, and denied being a leading member of the New People's Society at Kwaksan, although he admitted he was a well-to-do man in his own district.

With the conclusion of the examination of this witness, the proceedings were adjourned until next day.

### SEVENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

#### CHRISTIAN PASTOR'S INTERVIEW WITH GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

#### ALLEGED ALL-NIGHT SIEGE OF THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S TRAIN.

Short, July 7.

Yesterday was the seventh day's hearing of this remarkable case, and the proceedings in the morning were made more than usually interesting by the evidence of a Christian pastor who actually had an interview with the Governor-General, and who was alleged to have had the inten-

tion of assassinating the Count, but was unable because his Excellency came too close to the alleged would-be assassin! The pastor mildly suggested to the Court that this supposition was unreasonable. Another interesting statement was that made by the Court regarding an alleged all-night siege of the Governor-General's train.

The first prisoner examined yesterday was O Hak-su, aged 28, who said he had no religious convictions. He said he was not a member of the New People's Society, nor was he present at a meeting of members held at Syen Chuen in August 1910 to discuss a plan for assassinating Count Terauchi; accused said he was in North Pyongan-do at the time. He denied having gone to the railway-station on September 15th and October 20th, 1910, with others with the object of shooting Count Terauchi, but were disappointed to find that the Governor-General did not arrive. A number of similar questions were put by the Court in connection with other alleged visits to the railway-station, all of which were denied by accused.

#### TORTURE AND THREATS.

The Court asked accused whether he remembered having "confessed" to these statements at the police station and before the Procurator.

Prisoner replied that he "confessed" under torture at the police headquarters, and at the Procurator's Office he had to say the same thing because he was terrified by the threats of the police authorities, who told him that if he failed to admit the same statements he would be taken back to the police station and killed.

The next prisoner examined, Chl Sang-chu, aged 37, said he admitted to the police that he had joined the New People's Society about four years ago, but declared the statement was made under torture. He denied having proceeded to Kwaksan station on September 15th and October 20th, 1910, with the object of assassinating the Governor-General, nor did he go to Syen Chuen station with the same object on November 27th. On that day he was working at his employer's office in Kwaksan, and the date mentioned was a market-day. He denied having gone to Chyongju station on November 28th, nor was it true that he failed to shoot the Governor-General because of the strict guard which was kept. On account of the torture to which he was

subjected, however, he had "confessed" all this to the police.

#### THE ALLEGED GATHERING OF CONSPIRATORS.

Paik Mong-kin, a general merchant living at Chyongju, said he was not a member of the New People's Society, and did not know Yang Chom-miung.

By the Court:—About August 1910 Ok Kwan-pin came to your district from Pyong-yang and reported to the conspirators about the coming visit of the Governor-General. It was then agreed that the Governor should be killed; do you remember that?—It could not be possible.

You went to Chyongju station on September 15th and October 20th, 1910, with the intention of killing the Governor-General, did you not?—No.

Later on, about November 27th, the two men already mentioned came to your place again, and you all went to Syen Chuen railway-station with the idea of assassinating the Governor-General.—No, I did not.

Did you meet a number of other men at the Syen Chuen mission school, and then go back to Chyongju with the object of making another attack?—I did not. Moreover, such a thing would be impossible, for the station at Chyongju is very small, and it would not be possible for a party of men, all armed with weapons, as alleged, to get on to the platform, especially on an occasion when a very high official was expected. It is absurd to assume that the Japanese police, whose system is supposed to be the best in the world, would have allowed such a crowd of men to pass through. As for myself, I never had such a wicked idea in my life as to think of killing a man.

The Court observed that it was because he had had such a wicked idea that he now found himself in Court.

Accused also denied a number of other suggestions, including one that he had given certain foreigners at Syen Chuen 20 revolvers to mind.

The Court remarked that accused had confessed to all these statements at the police headquarters, and that they were borne out by the evidence of other accused.

The prisoner said that his alleged "confession" had been obtained by torture, and the other corroborative "evidence" had been obtained in the same way. If he was really guilty, he would not mind being sentenced to death.

#### CHRISTIAN PASTOR'S MEETING WITH GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

A Christian pastor from Chyongju, named Choi Syong-chu, aged 35, was next examined. He admitted to the Court that he had been fined Y10 at the Chyongju Court on December 24th, 1910, for having neglected to close his school, as ordered by the authorities, because in the official opinion it was not properly equipped. This school was one presided over by Mr. Roberts, and was situated at Shin-min, accused being the sub-principal. The customary questions by the Court regarding accused's connection with the "plot" being met with the usual denials, the examination proceeded:—

By the Court:—Did you go to the railway station?—Yes, I went once to welcome the Governor-General, and not to assassinate him. The Governor-General, through a gendarme who acted as interpreter, told me to do what I could for the welfare of the district.

How is it that Yi Myong-yong overheard you talking to Count Terauchi? Did you take other men with you?—I do not know how he could have overheard.

#### AN "UNREASONABLE" SUGGESTION.

Did you not say in your examination at the police headquarters that you took your students and the local members of the New People's Society on that occasion, but your idea of killing the Governor-General was frustrated because he came up too close to you, and so you missed the chance?—It sounds rather unreasonable. If I went there with the intention alleged, and I had the idea of killing the Governor-General, I should think it would have been the best possible opportunity for me to attack him.

From the evidence before the Court it is certain that you journeyed up and down the line between Chyongju and Syen Chuen at this time, which signifies that you, as the leader of the body, were preparing for the assassination to be attempted in these places.—I am a pastor engaged in a church, and I could not make such movements about the country without an allowance being given me by the Church. I have not told any lies before this impartial Court, and I am now simply waiting for judgement.

#### AN EX-CHRISTIAN CONVERT.

Kim Si-cham, aged 31, a merchant, who was next examined, said he was formerly a member of the Christian body,

but had recently left it. The reason for this was that one day he was seen drinking alcoholic liquor by some fellow-Christians who rebuked him, whereupon he decided to leave the Church. Accused said he had been told by Yi Seung-hun about the New People's Society, and was told that the object of the Society was to encourage education and industry among young Koreans, that they might build up a New People; hence the name of the Society. Accused sympathised with the aims of the body, and wanted to join, but was told that the Society was not yet properly established, so nothing more was said about it. He had not soon since.

#### THE OBJECTS OF THE NEW PEOPLE'S SOCIETY.

The Court then asked accused if he knew that the real objects of the New People's Society were to continually agitate the minds of the people by assassinating former Korean Ministers, the Governor-General, and others; to enlist the sympathy of the foreign Powers by suggesting that the Korean people would not submit to the Japanese Government; to establish a military school at Chientao to train young Koreans; and to take advantage of a war between Japan and China or Japan and the United States to start a war of independence. —Accused replied that the first time he had heard that these were the real objects of the Society was at the police headquarters.

Accused, in reply to further questions, denied having received a letter from Yang Chom-ming at Syen Chuen, giving instructions for carrying out an attack upon the Governor-General in September 1910, and also denied having been concerned in the various other alleged "attempts" upon Count Terauchi.

#### TORTURE AND THREATS.

Asked by the Court why he "confessed" to all these statements at the police headquarters, accused said that he denied them at first, but was hung up and beaten until he "confessed." He repeated his "confession" at the Procurator's Office because he was afraid of being sent back to the police headquarters if he then denied it. The evidence given by other prisoners to incriminate him must have been obtained in a similar manner.

#### MORE WHOLESALE DENIALS.

The examination of Hong Song-in, aged 36, consisted of one long series of denials. He said he was not a leader at Chyongju of the local members of the New People's Society, was not connected with the body, did not go to the railway-station to assassinate the Governor-General, did not go to Syen Chuen to attend a meeting of conspirators, was not selected to be a member of the revolver-collecting committee, did not go to Kwaksan railway-station, did not call a meeting at his house of conspirators, and did not decide—with others—to kill the Governor-General on his way to or from the ceremony celebrating the opening of the Yalu bridge.

#### CONFUCIAN PRISONER'S EVIDENCE OF TORTURE.

The next prisoner called up for examination was Chyang Wan-pyong, aged 39, who said he was a Confucian. He denied being a member of the New People's Society, the aims of which he was unacquainted with. He "confessed" to the contrary at the police station under torture.

By the Court: In August 1910 you went to Kwaksan from Syen Chuen to acquaint the local members of the New People's Society of the expected arrival of the Governor-General, whom it had been decided to assassinate at Charyonkwan. Is that so?—I admitted this at the police station, because I was tortured to such an extent that I twice fainted.

You also received ¥400 from O Hui-won, with which you bought revolvers from Antung.—I admitted this for the same reason, but if you will examine the merchant from whom it is alleged I bought the weapons, you will find that it is not true.

In reply to further questions, accused denied having gone to Charyonkwan station with the idea of assassinating the Governor-General in September and October, 1910, nor did he go there on November 27th and—as the Governor-General did not alight, but proceeded almost at once for New Wiju—proceed to that place in pursuit by the next train with a party of others. Accused said the station at New Wiju was small, and it would have been impossible for him and others to have got through the police and gendarmes without attracting attention.

#### ALLEGED ALL-NIGHT SIEGE OF GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S TRAIN.

By the Court: The Governor-General did not leave the train that night, so you and your followers kept up a siege all night, walking round the train.—Nothing of the kind ever happened to my knowledge.

You kept up the siege until three o'clock next morning, and came back again to the railway-station at six o'clock. The Governor-General left the train about eight o'clock, and went for a drive through the town in a carriage. You twice tried to assassinate him by shooting with a revolver, but failed owing to the strict guard maintained by the police and gendarmes.—I was at Kasan [Kwaksan?] at the time, and therefore could not have been in New Wiju.

You also tried to carry out the assassination of the Governor-General on the instruction of Lyu Tong-sol when his Excellency was on his way to the Yalu bridge.—I did not.

#### ALLEGED PLOT AGAINST PRINCE ITO.

In the spring of 1909, when Prince Ito accompanied the Emperor of Korea on a tour of inspection, did you determine to attack the Prince at Charyon-kwan? Then, as the train did not stop there, you took the next train and followed Prince Ito to another station. Is that so?—I admitted these statements at the police station, but they were all untrue.

At this stage the Court adjourned for tiffin.

#### MORE ABOUT THE ALLEGED SIEGE OF A TRAIN.

Upon the Court reassembling after tiffin yesterday Lyu Hak-rum, aged 30, was called up for examination. He said he had no religious convictions, nor did he know anything about the New People's Society. He denied having gone armed with a revolver to Charyon-kwan station in September and October, 1910, or to Syen Chuen station in October, with the object of assassinating the Governor-General. Neither did he pursue that official to New Wiju when he found that the train did not stop at Chyongju, where he had been waiting. It was not true that accused kept a watch on the train with other men all night in the hope of getting a chance of shooting the Governor-General. Accused denied being one of a party of men who waited about at New Wiju station until the Governor-General returned from his

drive through the city. Accused said he could not understand why he was charged, as he did not have any connection with any such daring plot.

Asked by the Court if he had confessed to the police that he had entrusted a number of revolvers to the keeping of Mr. McCune, the principal of the Syen Chuen mission school, accused said he had made such a confession, but it was forced from him as the result of the unbearable torture to which he had been subjected.

#### ANOTHER PASTOR'S EVIDENCE.

A dignified-looking man named Chang Kwan-sun, aged 45, who is a Christian pastor, said that he did not know Yang Chom-miung. Asked to explain why he did not know such a well-known man in Syen Chuen, accused said he only knew those people who were connected with his church. He denied having gone to New Wiju or Charyon-kwan with the intention of assassinating the Governor-General. Asked why he had admitted to the contrary when examined at the police headquarters, accused said he was low-spirited. [This may be another euphemism of the Court interpreter, meaning "tortured."—Ed.]

#### INFLUENTIAL KOREAN'S EVIDENCE.

O Heui-won, aged 39, was next examined. This man, who is well-built and has a pleasant appearance, held the Sixth Junior Grade of Court rank in the days of Korean independence. He said he had no religious convictions. Having admitted that he knew An Chang-no, the examination proceeded:—

By the Court: Do you know that An built a school at Pyong-yang?—Yes, I was told of it at the time it was built, and gave ¥3,000 towards the cost of construction.

It could not have been an ordinary relation which existed between you and An; there must have been some special connection.—No. I met him about four years ago, just at the time I was about to close my own school. Being told of his attempt to build a school, I gave him the amount just mentioned.

Was it from this connection that you were led to join the New People's Society, one of the organisers of which was An?—It was.

Were you the local leader at Chul San, or were you only managing the accounts of the branch?—Neither.

Do you know that the object of the Society was to build a military school,

to assassinate high officials, to wage a war to establish the independence of Korea if war broke out with America or China?—I did not know anything of the kind.

In August 1910 did Kim Il-Chom and Yi Yong-hyok call at your house to discuss the coming visit of the Governor-General, and plans for attempting his assassination at certain railway-stations?—I never had a glimpse of those men at that time.

As a result of that conference, you went to Syen Chuen with these men to collect revolvers to arm the assassins. You first got a revolver from Choi Tok-yun, and then you gave another man Y100 and sent him up to Antung to buy a number of revolvers:—This is absolutely untrue.

You went to Syen Chuen station on September 15th and again on October 10th, 1910, and on each occasion found that you had been misled by a false report. On November 27th you went to Charyon-kwan with a party of men, but as the Governor-General did not leave his car, you pursued him to New Wiju. —I did not go to New Wiju at that time.

#### THE ALLEGED SIEGE OF THE TRAIN.

At New Wiju the Governor-General remained in his car all night, and you and your party kept watch all round the train during the night in the hope of getting an opportunity to shoot him. You went away in the early hours of the morning, and returned to the station about six o'clock. The Governor-General went for a drive through New Wiju, and both going and returning you tried to kill him, but failed owing to the strict guard that was kept.—I did not go to New Wiju.

Did Lyu Tong-sol call on you in October last?—Yes, and he stayed for a night in my house.

And what conversation did you have together?—Lyu told me that he was organising an industrial company and asked me to take some shares. He said he had official permission to establish the concern.

You surely had some further talk together?—Lyu told you that it was a great pity that the conspirators had made so many fruitless attempts to carry out their plans, but said another opportunity would present itself when the Governor-General went to the Yalu bridge. You had a long talk over the

matter with Baron Yun and others at Seoul, and you all agreed that you should do your best not to lose this next opportunity. Do you remember this?—I do not. I never had any such conversation.

You say so now because you have been asked to deny it by Lyu, have you not?—No.

Did you not try to kill the Governor-General at Charyon-kwan on October 31st and November 1st and 2nd, and having missed him, followed by the next train?—No.

You deny everything, but you did the same thing when Prince Ito made his tour of inspection through the country. You pursued the Prince as far as Wiju, and there is evidence here to prove it. —I did not.

Yi Keui-tang, aged 37, was the next man to be examined. He said he joined the New People's Society five years ago. A man named Chong went to him and invited him to join, explaining that the Society was intended to promote science, industry, and other modern knowledge among the Koreans. Accused there-upon said he endorsed the objects of the Society, and accordingly joined. Had he known that the Society had as its "real object—as stated by the Court—the assassination of prominent officials, he would not have joined. He had "confessed" to the police that he did know this, and he had also admitted being concerned in the conspiracy.

By the Court: You remember stating at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office that you had purchased twelve revolvers?—Yes, but I was suffering from severe brain trouble when I was examined by the police, and I thought that as I was suffering severe pain it would be best for me to admit all the questions put to me by the authorities, so that I should not be kept under examination any longer. I made the same statement to the Procurator for similar reasons.

Did Yang Chom-mung come to you about October 10th, 1910, and tell you the Governor-General was coming, and you and others went to New Wiju to attack him, but found the report was wrong?—I know nothing of such an incident.

Accused also denied any knowledge of a Korean barrister named An being concerned in the plot.

By the Court:—On October 31st, 1910, the Governor-General was at Wiju, and you and your party were also there, all

armed with revolvers. The General left his car and passed you and the others at a distance of about 15 paces, but you were suddenly overcome with fear, and dared not shoot.—I admitted this at the police station, but it is not true. I also admitted having been with others at the station on four other occasions, and being unable each time to carry out our plans, but this is also untrue.

#### A PRISONER WHO WAS NOT TORTURED.

You also admitted having made six attempts on the Governor-General while on his way to and from the Yalu.—I was quite ill at the time, and could not stand the examination. It was in order to relieve my feeble self of the strain of the severe examination that I had to admit these statements. I do not mean, however, that I was put to torture.

You cannot make such an excuse as that. You were the first man to be examined among those from Wiju.—I am quite ready to be convicted for what I said I did.

Did you not really attempt to assassinate the Governor-General?—I can only leave my case to the judgement of this Court.

It will be to your advantage to speak openly regarding all the facts connected with this case. Practically all those who have so far been examined have said that they were beaten, tortured, or hung up, and that they "died three times" and so on; only you have denied being subjected to any such treatment. We believe you are a man of good understanding. Come now, freely unburden your self.—I was sick when I was questioned, and really could not bear a long examination. I thought it would be difficult to get through the inquiry by simply denying the charges, so I decided to give a made-up story.

Do you think that you can get off safely by making a mere denial here in open Court?—I have already said that I am only awaiting the Court's decision. I am a man of little knowledge, but I wanted to help establish a school. How could I attempt to assassinate a man?

We are afraid that people will say the men from Wiju are lacking in courage. You had much better disclose your thoughts. If you tell us all about the affair, no man will dare blame you.—I have a mind to do what I can for the sake of the land of my fathers, but I

have never had the slightest desire or inclination to kill a man.

The examination of this prisoner being concluded the Court adjourned.

## EIGHTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### REMARKABLE ALLEGATIONS AGAINST FOREIGN MISSIONARIES.

#### SCHOOL DESCRIBED AS A "DEVIL'S DEN."

SEOUL, July 9.

Yesterday's proceedings in Court were rather more interesting than the previous few days. Practically the whole of the morning was taken up by the examination of a young Korean teacher whose school was described by the Judge as a "devil's den," but subsequently turned out to be subsidised by the Government-General and officially recognised as doing work in bringing about better relations between Japanese and Koreans. Some remarkable allegations were again made by the Court in regard to the actions of certain missionaries, who, if the "evidence" in the hands of the Court is worth anything at all, are guilty of encouraging, condoning, and actively assisting the carrying out of the "plot." As usual, however, the accused denied that the "confessions" made to this effect were true, and the complaints of torture were again repeated.

The first person to be examined yesterday was Paik Yong-sok, aged 34, who said his statement to the police that he had been a member of the New People's Society for six years was wrong. The usual questions regarding various visits to railway stations were put, and denied; accused said that on the day he was alleged to have gone to New Wiju he was at an athletic meeting at the Yangsil school. The examination was concluded as follows:—

By the Court: Is it true that you prowled about after the Governor-General on several occasions between October and November last year?—No.

You confessed all this at the Procurator's Office; why do you deny it all today?—I did not admit these statements as facts; I simply said that I had asserted to them at the police headquarters, thinking that I could tell the truth about the matter in this open Court.

## ANOTHER PASTOR'S EVIDENCE.

Another Christian pastor of New Wiju, named Kim Chang-kyon, aged 41, was next examined. He said he was the sub-principal of the Yangsil school, of which Mr. Whittemore, a foreign missionary, was principal. Having denied being a member of the New People's Society, the Court asked him whether he had not frequently discussed plans for the assassination of the Governor-General with other members of the Society. Accused denied having done any such thing, and said that if he had he would have to answer to his Heavenly Father for it.

By the Court: You are mentioned in the records as having gone to Syen Chuen on September 15th and October 20th with other men, all of you being armed with revolvers. Is this true?—No. Those are not true statements.

You also proceeded to the railway station on November 27th and 28th; is that so?—No. I did not even hear of the Governor-General's visit at that time.

You and your party were all ready to attack Count Terauchi, but owing to the strict guard kept you were unable to carry out your plan. Is that so?—No. The Heavenly Father knows it well.

How could the Heavenly Father know such things?—Accused made no reply.

Asked whether he had kept revolvers at Yangsil school, accused said it was impossible, adding that if the charge were true, he would be willing to be punished for it twice, since he had other persons under his charge, and should set them an example.

The Court pointed out that Paik Yong-sok and Yi Keul-tang had given evidence against accused, to which he replied that they may have given false evidence as the result of torture.

By the Court: On November 26 a report was received by you at New Wiju stating that the Governor-General was coming next day. You were worried because you had not heard the news from Syen Chuen, so you discussed the matter with the local members of the secret society. Is that so?—I did not even know the Governor-General was coming.

You subsequently got word from Syen Chuen of the Count's coming, and so you took the revolvers from the school, where they had been concealed, and started for New Wiju station.—It is not true. I denied this statement at the police station, and the police then beat

me on the chest. I became frightened, and told the story that I made up myself to escape further ill-treatment.

Were you not once examined by the Procurator together with Paik?—Yes.

What was said to you on that occasion?—I was told to make the same statement as that made at the police station. I said the Heavenly Father would punish me if I did, whereupon the police said they would send me back to the police headquarters. At this threat I became frightened, and acknowledged what I had said before.

We did not expect to hear such foolish excuses from you. If you tell lies for such reasons, your Heavenly Father will surely punish you.—I should have been already punished by Him if I deliberately told a lie. And even if the Court decide against me because it thinks I am telling a lie, I trust our Heavenly Father will not do the same.

In conclusion, accused denied the truth of the evidence said to have been given against him, urging that it must have been obtained from the other accused by torture.

An Kwang-ho, aged 26, a school-teacher, said he was not a member of the New People's Society, and had never heard of a man coming over to his village to give warning of the approaching visit of the Governor-General about August 1910.

By the Court: How is it possible for you not to know about such a thing? Have you ever been to Syen Chuen, and do you know where it is?—I have heard of it, but have never been there. It is about 120 miles south-east of my village.

In reply to other questions, accused said that he did not know any man who had brought back 15 revolvers from Syen Chuen, but he had told the police that he did know the man, and he gave at random the names of a number of his friends as being fellow conspirators. He did this simply to avoid further torture. A whole series of alleged "confessions" were denied by accused, who said they were fabricated stories admitted by him merely to escape further torture.

By the Court: When the members of the secret society were gradually being arrested by the police, did you take a number of revolvers to an American named Ross, and ask him to mind them so that they would escape the officials?—If such a statement is entered on the police record of my evidence, it is not properly represented. The officers con-



ducting my examination would not listen to my explanations, so I asked if I could say that I had entrusted the firearms to the foreigner, and I was told I could.

Accused went on to deny having gone to New Wiju station with a revolver, although evidence to this effect had been given. Such evidence, he said, must have been given under torture.

By the Court: Did you hear what Yi Keni-tang said in this Court the day before yesterday? Did he say that he had been subjected to torture?—No, but Yi is assuredly crazy.

The next prisoner to be examined was Song Cha-hyong, aged 33, who said he was once convicted for rioting and sentenced to a year's imprisonment, but was subsequently released from prison. The customary questions regarding complicity in the "plot" were put by the Court and denied by accused, who said he had to admit these statements at the police station. He admitted having gone to New Wiju station in October last year when the Governor-General passed through, but he went to welcome him. If he had had any intention of assassinating the Governor-General, he would be prepared for sentence of death.

By the Court: You went to the station ostensibly to welcome the Count, but you really intended to kill him.—No; I am innocent of any such intention. When I read of the arrest of a number of men on a charge of conspiracy, I wept.

A teacher from the Taisong school, Pyong-yang, named Chang Ung-chin, aged 25, was next examined in Japanese, which he spoke with remarkable ease and accuracy. He said he belonged to the Congregational Church, and not the Presbyterian Church, to which most of the other accused belong. Accused said he went to Japan in 1903, and studied in two schools in Tokyo. Then he went to America, where he stayed for about eighteen months, returning to Tokyo and entering the Higher Normal School, graduating in 1910. He returned to Korea in August and joined the Taisong school as a teacher, obtaining this post on the recommendation of An Chang-ho. The last-named gave him ¥300 for travelling expenses when he returned to Korea from Tokyo. Accused said he was in receipt of a monthly salary of ¥60 at the school. He did not know that An was a great politician, and had built the Taisong school and one other school. There was a body organised by the teachers and students of the Taisong school

called the Young Men's Companionship Society, the object of which was to encourage the pursuit of study. Accused did not know whether this was really a political body having as its object the recovery of national rights, the assassination of officials, and so on. About the time of his return to Korea he heard of the attack upon Yi Wan-yong, who was stabbed in Seoul, but he denied that An Chang-ho had told him that Yi's assailant was a man connected with his (accused's) school.

By the Court: How did those at your school behave at the time of the annexation?—I did not notice any difference whatever. Neither the teachers or students displayed any change.

In reply to a further question, accused said there was a tinge of anti-Japanese sentiment at the school.

By the Court: We regard you as a gentleman, and trust you to tell us everything openly. Now, did you not bear of a meeting at which speeches were made opposing the annexation, and did you not see An Tai-kuk among the party?—I said so at the police station, but it is untrue. I admit, however, that An was one of our school councillors.

#### THE ALLEGATIONS AGAINST MISSIONARIES

Did you not say at the police station that Baron Yun, addressing those present, said that the Koreans could not submit in this way to Japan, and that meetings of members of the Society should be called and speeches made expressing their real thoughts? You then advised Baron Yun not to proceed in that way, but to work secretly, slowly, but steadily. The meeting then became excited owing to the division of opinion, some being in favour of immediate action, and others approving your slow but steady policy. Some of those present were talking angrily, others were weeping sadly, and others laughing violently. It was then proposed by someone that the foreigners residing in the locality should be consulted, and a committee was accordingly appointed for this purpose. They subsequently called upon the foreigners, who told them that it was unadvisable to do anything openly, and advised the deputation to tell the members that they should openly appear to quietly submit to Japan's authority, but they should secretly go to work to devise a plan to make a stand against it. The foreigners also suggested getting advice

from Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak at Seoul, which suggestion was acted upon. An Taikuk went up to the capital and learned that Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak were of the same opinion as the foreigners. It was decided that the leaders of the New People's Society should frame a scheme to bring about the desired end, and communicate it to the local branches. A Korean employed at the police headquarters was to keep the conspirators informed if any steps were to be taken by the police. Do you know all these facts?

Accused: I had to acknowledge them when examined at the police headquarters.

In August 1910 Yi Chong-soon came to Pyong-yang from Seoul on behalf of Baron Yun, as a result of which journey An Taikuk and Yi Seung-hun went to Seoul to consult Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak on the steps to be taken to carry out the Society's intentions. After these men returned to Pyong-yang it became known that the Governor-General was coming on a tour of inspection, and it was decided to assassinate him at one of the railway stations. You told the police during your examination that Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak had given orders for the assassination to be effected, and they also told you to talk the matter over with the foreigners in your district. It was found impracticable to make arrangements for the attack to be made at Pyong-yang, owing to the large number of soldiers there, so it was decided that Syen Chuen should be selected as a suitable place to make the attempt on the Governor-General. An and Yi accordingly went to Syen Chuen, and you remained at Pyong-yang with a number of men to make another attack if that at Syen Chuen failed. You consulted the foreigners about this plan, and they approved it, and offered to undertake the task of spreading the news when the plot was successfully carried out. Do you remember this?—No, I do not.

So you, together with O Tai-ye, started to collect revolvers, and purchased a number from Antung.—I know nothing of any such incident.

The Court then reviewed at great length the alleged plans made for attacks on the Governor-General in September, October, and November, and proceeded:—

The foreigners Moffett, Wells, and Williams were communicated with in con-

nection with the plans, and in response went themselves to the local headquarters of the New People's Society, where they addressed the members and said that they should be easily able to accomplish their object, and that they (the foreigners) would protect them as far as possible. The foreigners said: "Surely young men should have unconquerable spirits." Do you know all these facts?—I do not. I did not communicate with the foreigners at Pyong-yang, nor did I see foreigners at the Taisiong school or anywhere else, urging people to carry out the conspiracy.

The Court gave a very circumstantial account of accused's alleged movements in connection with the alleged attempt on the Governor-General, when no man dared to be the first to fire, all of which allegations accused denied. The Court proceeded:—

You ordered your party to assemble that evening at the Taision School, when you expressed your dissatisfaction at their failure to execute the assassination. Then came Moffett, who ridiculed you all, and said the Koreans were men of weak minds. It was then decided to make another attempt the next day.—I know nothing about all this. I did not go to the railway station that day. Even if I had a mind to assassinate the Governor-General, I would never allow young students to take part in any such scheme.

You then decided to make another attempt when an opportunity offered, and put the revolvers in a box and stored them in your school.—No; I did not.

In reply to further questions, accused denied having entrusted the box of revolvers to foreigners in order to escape detection by the police, nor did he give the box to anyone else. He denied having handled a box of revolvers at all.

The Court remarked that accused had admitted all these statements at the police headquarters and before the Procurator, to which he replied that he wanted to get the examination over as quickly as possible as he was in poor health, and said "Yes" to every question put to him, although he knew the statements admitted were untrue.

By the Court: Look here; you are a graduate of a Higher Normal School, is it possible that a man like you could have admitted by simply saying "Yes" all these statements which you now say you know nothing about?—There is no help for it. I am willing to be convicted.

ed for what I have said, but I meant to explain the real circumstances in this open Court. This I have done, and I now only await judgment.

Is it not because you are misunderstood that you now deny what you have already admitted? There is nothing to be ashamed of in admitting the whole facts now, in the presence of your comrades, of whom you are a leader. Come on, my man!—That is not my reason for now denying what I said.

Do you then mean that you want to save your subordinates by denying what you have already said?—No, that is not the case either.

#### JUDGE'S DENUNCIATORY REMARKS ABOUT A SCHOOL.

Is it not reasonable, then, to conclude that you are a man without sense although you are the head teacher of the Taisong School, of which An Tai-kuk is a councillor? The school itself is a devil's den.—That is not so; at least, since I went there I have tried to work it on proper and peaceful lines.

Did you not give way to the general influence at the school and agree to the conspiracy? Indeed, a man could not be blamed for doing so, in the circumstances.—No, I did not.

You, whose scholastic career has been above the ordinary, have already admitted this at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office. We cannot believe that you made these statements in the circumstances mentioned. Moreover, some of the accused have given evidence that you are the local leader of the party at Pyong-yang.—I have never admitted this.

Educated man though you are, you are still ignorant of the affairs of the world, and you were put up by those behind you to agree to the conspiracy. It is not altogether a bad thing to be at the head of a party. You are certainly well up in modern knowledge, but An is certainly better posted on worldly matters.—During my examination I was sometimes subjected to torture. I could pass through the police examination by mere explanation and denial, but I could not confess to things with which I had nothing to do. If I made all the statements which the Court now says I did, I must have been under a delusion, but I assure the Court that never have I had such dangerous thoughts as have been attributed to me.

#### DEFENCE COUNSEL INTERPOLATES.

Mr. Takahashi, one of the counsel for the defence, here rose and begged leave to make a statement. Counsel said that, as the Court was aware, accused was a teacher at the Taisong school (which the judge had described as a "devil's den"). Now, the work undertaken by this school—at the suggestion of an official in the Government-General and another Japanese living at Pyong-yang—was to Japonise the Koreans living in the district. This work has already been started, and the school is in receipt of a subsidy from the Government-General for that reason. Accused was engaged in this work up to the time he was arrested. As a matter of fact, he was not at all anti-Japanese, but was trying hard to exert his influence to bring the Koreans round to accept the new order of things and become amenable to Japanese influence.

The Presiding Judge (to accused):—Is this true?

Accused:—Yes. The Japanese gentlemen mentioned are Mr. Kawakami Tadakichi, who was Chief Clerk at the Pyong-yang Appeal Court, and Mr. Watase Tsunekichi, the pastor of a church in Seoul. We have discussed this work together at the school.

When did you start on this enterprise?—The work was started about January last.

Counsel for the defence resumed his statement. He said the accused was a man who understood fairly well the general trend of the times, and it was his view that it was very hard work to adopt the Japonising policy for dealing with Koreans who held very extreme views. He considered that these people could not be dissuaded from their opinions by ordinary means. He recognised that the present action was a phenomenon which proved this, and was an administrative necessity. He therefore decided that it was advisable to get the case over as soon as possible so far as he was concerned, and it was for this reason that he agreed to everything that was put to him by the authorities.

The Judge (to accused):—Was that so?—Yes.

This concluded the examination of the accused, and the Court proceeded to question O Tai-yung, who said he had been to America, and returned to Korea about six years ago. He was then 19, and entered the Taisong School as a student. He remembered a school athlete

tic meeting being held just outside Pyongyang, but did not know that Baron Yun had made a speech urging the assassination of Count Yi Wan-yong. He remembered An Tai-kuk being arrested at the time the Count was attacked by Yi Chai-myong, but did not know the reason, nor did he know whether a meeting was held at Pyong-yang to celebrate An's release.

By the Court: At that meeting An made a speech in which he said he had refused to confess anything, so had been released. He spoke boastfully, and told those present that if ever they were arrested, they should refuse to confess anything, which was the only way to escape getting into trouble. Do you know this?—I have never heard of it.

When the annexation was declared in August 1910 there was a large meeting held at the Taisong school, when it was agreed to assassinate high officials on instructions from the leaders in Seoul. You and others went to the railway station on August 20th, September 15th, and October 20th with the object of attacking the Governor-General.—I know nothing of all this. I was not in Pyong-yang on these occasions.

Accused also denied having gone to the railway station on November 27th, nor was he concerned at any time in any plot to kill the Governor-General.

With the conclusion of this prisoner's examination, the Court adjourned for to-morrow.

The examination was resumed after to-morrow, the first prisoner to be called up being Pyen In-syo, a teacher, aged 31. He said the principal of his school, which was at Pyongyang, was Mr. W. N. Blair, an American missionary. There was a society at the school, the object of which was to assist the poorer members of the school with their expenses for tuition. This society had nothing to do with the New People's Society, nor was accused a member of the latter organisation.

By the Court: Do you know the objects of the New People's Society?—No.

Yes, you do; you know its objects very well. It is to assassinate high officials. The Headquarters of the Society are at San Francisco, where it publishes two newspapers. There is another organ of the party published in Hawaii, while the Society has a branch at Vladivostok. In Korea the affairs of the Society have been managed by Baron Yun, Yang Ki-tak, An Tai-kuk, and Kel Chin-hyong. You were the man in charge of the branch at Pyong-

yang. You know all this, do you not?—No; I know nothing about the matters mentioned.

Did you not yourself make these statements at the police station?—Yes, but that was because I was put to torture. At the Procurator's Office I at first denied these statements, but as the officials told me I should be sent back to the police headquarters, I was obliged to again admit these false statements.

Are we expected to believe such stories as that from the lips of a Middle School teacher?—But it is the truth.

About October 1910 a message was sent to you from Baron Yun, stating that the Governor-General was due to reach Pyong-yang on the 28th of that month, and that your party should kill him on arrival. Accordingly you and your party went to the station armed with revolvers, prepared to kill the Governor-General. Is that so?—No, it is not true.

On the 11th of the same month a message was received at the Taikenk Soh-kwan, a book store in Pyong-yang, announcing the coming of the Governor-General. At the request of your fellow-members of the Society, you went to your principal [Mr. Blair] and disclosed your plans, and he told you to carry them out and to be careful not to be detected.—No; that is not true. Our principal is also a pastor, and could not have done such a thing as that.

You then held another meeting, at which a foreigner was present. Reports from Seoul regarding Count Terachen's movements were discussed, and a Korean police-officer said the Governor-General would arrive on the 27th. Some men went to Syen Chuen, but you and others remained at Pyong-yang. You distributed revolvers among the party, but when you went to the station you found that the report sent you was false.—I know nothing of all this.

You went again to the station, and this time the Governor-General arrived. He went by carriage to the Kuiyan Club, and you were ready to shoot him but the guard kept was too strict. You and your followers met that night at the Taisong School and discussed your plans, and on the following 29th again went to the station, but again the guard was too strict.—I never met anyone to discuss such a scheme, nor did I once go to the railway station.

A number of other similar allegations were made by the Court, and were all

denied by accused, who said the statements he had made to the police were forced from him by torture. The Court then showed accused three small notebooks, which he admitted were his.

" DANGEROUS THOUGHTS " IN NOTEBOOKS.  
AGAIN.

The Court then read a number of phrases from these notebooks, of which the following are examples:—" Remember, you 20 million brethren of mine, this is our country, which our forefathers built up by their sweat and blood. Hurrah for the great Han Empire!" " Ye sons of Korea, forward with the national flag, and save and protect 20 millions of your brethren. Ponder upon the fate of Poland! The ruin of our country is the end of our existence."

By the Court: You noted such phrases as these in your notebooks, and taught them to your young students. It is not surprising, therefore, that you should have been engaged in a scheme for assassinating the Governor-General.—The phrases written by me are what everybody knows. They are popular songs. I had them copied because students are fond of these songs. By writing them in my notebooks I had no special meaning to express.

Shown by the Court a postcard addressed by accused to a friend of his, and on which was written a passage stating that the spirit of the sun [the original character for which is frequently used as an abbreviation for Japan] was very severe, and could not be likened to anything, accused said this merely meant that the weather was very hot.

By the Court: The card was written in the winter. Do you mean to say that it was very hot in winter?—But I meant nothing else than that.

ANOTHER TEACHER'S DENIALS.

Cha Li-suk, aged 32, a teacher at the Taisong School, Pyong-yang, was next examined. He said he was a member of the New People's Society, but it was not true that the objects of this Society were to assassinate prominent persons, establish a military school, and so on. He had "confessed" this at the police headquarters "under pressure." Accused denied having pursued Prince Ito, when he made a tour of inspection, with the object of killing him.

By the Court: You went to the Taikenk Sohkwon book-store and suggested

the murder of Count Yi Wan-yong, did you not?—No. Moreover, the book-store is in the main street of Pyong-yang, and hardly the place to discuss matters like assassination.

Have you on several occasions attempted to assassinate Count Terauchi?—No.

Have you ever discussed the conspiracy with Baird, Williams, and a few other foreigners?—No.

About October you consulted Mr. Moffett about the proposed assassination, and you tried to attack the Governor-General on three occasions, did you not?—I was away from Pyong-yang at the time, and therefore could not have done so. I had to admit all this to the police, however, because I was "severely rebuked."

When some of your party began to be arrested for being concerned in the conspiracy, you thought it would be better to have the revolvers concealed in the houses occupied by foreigners, so you packed the weapons in orange-boxes, and through certain other men these boxes were entrusted for safe keeping to Messrs. Moffett, Graham Lee, and Baird.—I simply acknowledged this when asked the question; what I said then is not true.

AN ESCAPE FROM THE POLICE.

Didn't you once escape from the police, and were you not re-arrested? Why did you run away?—I got frightened at being asked questions about things of which I knew absolutely nothing and I determined to escape from the police and commit suicide.

Did you not run away because you got frightened at the thought of being pressed to give the real facts, and you knew that if you did the matter would become very serious?—No; that was not the reason.

There is no reason why a Middle School teacher should have said what he did not mean simply because he was scared by the police.—I have not before had the opportunity of speaking fully as I can now in this open Court. My only hope now is that the Court will understand my position.

KOREAN PASTOR'S EVIDENCE.

La Il-pong, aged 42, pastor of a church at Pyong-yang, said he had been a teacher at the Taipong school. He had joined the New People's Society on the suggestion of An Chang-ho, but he could not remember the date. The object of the Society was to promote education and en-

courage industry among the Korean people. He knew of no amendment to those objects. Accused denied having gone to the railway-station on various dates with the intention of killing the Governor-General. The statement made by him to the police that he was locked up in the third-class waiting-room when waiting for the Governor-General was not true, and was made under torture by the police. It was also untrue that he had attempted to kill the Governor-General as he passed near a police-box; this "confession" was made because accused was submitted to unbearable torture. It was not true that accused had given the boxes of revolvers to foreigners to mind, but he had "confessed" this at the police station because he feared he would be killed if he did not.

Ok Sung-pin, aged 28, and Sub Kue-pung, aged 31, were examined, and denied all knowledge of any conspiracy. Yun Wan-sam, aged 26, a graduate of Sung-sil school, Pyongyang, of which Mr. Baird is principal, said he knew nothing about any meeting of conspirators at the Tai-song school, nor of Mr. Baird having expressed himself in favour of the plan for assassinating the Governor-General during his tour. Neither did he know that Baron Yun had approved the opinion expressed by Mr. Baird. After some further questions of minor importance, the proceedings were adjourned.

## NINTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### MORE REMARKABLE ALLEGATIONS.

### FOREIGNERS AS EXPERT ADVISERS ON ASSASSINATION.

SEOUL, July 10.

Yesterday was the ninth day of the proceedings in the "conspiracy" trial, and the Court again endeavoured to show that the foreign missionaries acted as advisers to the "conspirators," encouraged them to carry out their alleged plans, approved the arrangements alleged to have been made for assassinating the Governor-General, and expressed satisfaction that such a plot was to be carried out. As usual, however, the accused firmly denied the Court's allegations, and said that the "confessions" were merely expressions of acquiescence with the questions put by the police authorities. There was a large attendance of spectators in Court yesterday, including about

seventeen foreigners, three of whom were ladies.

Before the proceedings proper were opened, those of the accused who wished to consult their counsel were taken from the main Court room in which the trial is being held to another special Court close by. Although it only takes about two minutes to go from one Court to the other, those of the accused who went to see their counsel were first put into irons again and had their faces covered with the straw-hats which used to be frequently seen in Japan when criminals were taken through the streets. Thus manacled and hooded, they were taken to discuss their defence with counsel, and it may be noted that the conversation passing between counsel and their clients was carried on in the presence of a Court clerk.

Yi Tak-whan, aged 36, was first called up for examination. In reply to questions, he said he was asked to join the New People's Society by a man named Hong, and afterwards by An Chang-ho, but he did not do so. At the police headquarters, however, in order to escape further torture, he "confessed" that he was a member of the council of the Society, and was in charge of a local branch. These statements, he now declared, were pure fabrications. He had also "confessed" that Baron Yun was the head of the organisation, and that Lyu Tong-sol was the second in command, but these statements were also untrue. His "confession" that he had attempted to send men to Japan to assassinate high officials of the Government, including Prince Katsura and Prince Yamagata, was also false. Neither did he plot against the life of Prince Ito, when as Resident-General he made a tour through Korea. Accused denied acquaintance with a man named Kim, employed as an accountant in the office of the *Tai-han Mai-I Shunpa* (a Korean journal formerly owned by the late Mr. E. T. Bethell), and he denied that Kim, acting as a messenger for Baron Yun, had instructed accused to kill Prince Ito at Pyongyang.

By the Court: Do you know that later on Baron Yun himself came to Pyongyang and expressed the opinion that conditions in Korea were getting worse, and that as Count Yi Wan-yong, the Korean Premier, was responsible for this state of affairs, his life should pay forfeit? Baron Yun then suggested that you should form a "dare-to-die" party

to carry out the assassination of Count Yi?—I know nothing about it. I was never spoken to by anyone about such a thing.

But you gave evidence that you were one of those present at the meeting addressed by Baron Yun.—I never had anything to do with such a scheme.

Yi Chai-myong subsequently attacked Count Yi, and was arrested. An Taikuk was also arrested on a charge of being concerned in the plot. Upon An Taikuk returning home after his release from jail, An told his friends that he was released because he had persisted in denying everything the authorities asked him.—I never heard anything of the kind from An.

What were your feelings at the time of the annexation?—I had no particular feelings about the matter.

You held a meeting to consider the question. There were some who held the opinion that the Koreans should express their opposition to the political change by making speeches and public demonstrations, as otherwise the world might think that the Koreans were satisfied with the changed condition of affairs. Others were of opinion that to make such demonstrations was inadvisable in the circumstances, and urged that it would be better to work secretly against Japan. Is that so?—I heard of this for the first time at the police headquarters, but was forced by torture to admit that I knew the alleged facts.

#### CONSPIRATORS' FOREIGN ADVISERS.

It was then agreed by the meeting that the question should be submitted to the foreigners who acted as advisers for their consideration. You and two others were appointed to bring the matter to the notice of certain foreigners, including J. H. Wells, W. N. Blair, Graham Lee, E. M. Manly (?), W. L. Swallen, W. M. Baird, and J. G. Holdcroft.—All this is absolutely new to me.

But you admitted all this at the police headquarters, did you not?—I simply acknowledged the questions put to me.

There was no possibility of the authorities knowing all this unless you said so yourself.—I simply said "yes" to the questions put to me.

Did Wells say to you that inflammatory speeches were of no use, but that the assassination of officials should be carried out?—No, he did not.

Consequently, the opinion of the head of the Society, Baron Yun, was obtained.

and was found to agree with the opinion expressed by the foreigners in regard to assassination. Yun said that that was the object of the Society, and must be carried out.—I do not know anything about such matters.

A few days later orders were received from the headquarters of the Society in Seoul for a representative to be sent to discuss details of the conspiracy. An and a few others accordingly proceeded to Seoul. They were instructed that the Governor-General, Count Terauchi, should be assassinated at Syen Chuen on his way to the north. Syen Chuen was selected because it was more convenient for the conspirators owing to the large number of foreign residents there. An Taikuk and Yi Seung-hun went up to Syen Chuen, and you and others were instructed to make preparations at Pyong-yang in case the attempt at Syen Chuen failed. Do you remember this?—No.

On August 20th, 1910, you and others went to Pyong-yang station to carry out your scheme, but found you had been misled by a false report. The same thing happened on September 15th and October 20th.—I have never thought of assassinating the Governor-General. If I had, I should be prepared for punishment.

Further preparations were made for another attack; and by the advice of the foreigners, more revolvers were collected.—I know nothing at all about this.

A meeting was held at the Taisong School at Pyong-yang. Moffett, who had then just returned to Korea, attended that meeting, and gave an address in which he expressed his great regret that the Han Dynasty had met its fate while he had been away, but he said he was happy to think that a plot was now proposed to assassinate the Governor-General. He then assured you all that he would give all the assistance in his power.—I heard that story at the police headquarters for the first time. To my knowledge we Koreans have never been spoken to like that by the foreigner referred to, who is a missionary and not likely to talk in such a way.

Then Wells stood up and said that all the other foreigners approved of the scheme for assassinating the Governor-General, and said that when the plot was successfully carried out, he would bring to the notice of the Powers the real ideas of the Korean people.—I hear this story now for the first time.

It cannot be the first time; you knew about it before.—I did not.

On November 16th, when you held an other meeting at Pyong-yang, which was attended by Moffett and Wells, you told the foreigners that you were all very much obliged to them for coming so often to the meetings. You said it was because you trusted so much in the foreigners that you had so frequently asked them to come, but you said you hoped they would not think they were being worried by you. Further, you thanked them for their continued advice and guidance, and asked them to publish the views of your party on Korean affairs when the plot was carried out successfully. Do you still insist that you hear this story now for the first time?—I simply acknowledged the questions put to me by the authorities during my examination.

It is what you said, not what other people knew.—I merely replied "yes" to the questions put to me.

Yi Seung-hun then appeared in Pyong-yang, bringing news of the certain coming of the Governor-General. Similar news was received from Koreans employed in the police force, and from Seoul. An Tal-kuk and Yi Seung-hun went off to Syen Chuen, while you and others stayed at Pyong-yang. On the evening of November 26th you and your party met at the Taisong school, and you distributed revolvers among them. You also instructed your followers to lay their hands on their weapons as soon as they heard the Governor-General's train coming, and whoever found himself in the most advantageous position should fire at the Governor-General.—It is impossible that I could have given such instructions, because at that time I was not in Pyong-yang.

You went to the railway station in command of your party on November 27th, and you stationed yourselves near the third class waiting room. The train arrived in due course, but the Governor-General did not leave his car, and the train at once started for New Wiju.—I only acknowledged this at the police headquarters because I was questioned, and answered "yes."

You then decided to attack the Governor-General the following day, when he passed through on his return journey. You went to the station, and entered the third class waiting room. When the train arrived, the Governor-General alighted and drove to the official residence of the local Commander of the troops. Just as he was leaving the train, a railway employé came along and locked the door

of the waiting room. As you were then shut in, you lost the opportunity of carrying out your plans.—This has never taken place.

You all assembled that night at the Taisong school, when Moffett, who was evidently displeased at your failure to carry out your plans, made a remark to the effect that the Koreans were a people lacking in courage and decision. On the 29th of the same month you made another attempt on the life of the Governor-General, but it failed owing to the strict guard which was kept.—All this has never happened to me.

When did you first meet Lyu Tong-sol?—At the opening ceremony of the Seoul branch of the Hansong Bank.

Do you know that the conspirators agreed to leave the revolvers in charge of foreigners, and with this object packed them in five orange-boxes, which were entrusted for safe keeping to Moffett, Wells, Graham Lee, Baird, and Holdcroft?—No, I do not know anything of the kind.

Not only did you yourself give evidence to this effect at the police headquarters, but others of the accused have given similar evidence. These men have said that you were the principal figure in the New People's Society at Pyong-yang, and were of particular service in conferring with the foreigners. What you stated at the police headquarters must be true, since your "confession" was identical with the evidence given by the others.—I cannot understand why the other men examined should have made these statements against me.

There were several groups of men stationed at various points along the line between Kaisong and New Wiju. This was done in order that if an attempt failed at one station, it might be repeated at another. This plan was carried out on the suggestion of the foreigners, who said that by scattering a large number of conspirators at different places along the railway, the authorities would be greatly handicapped in dealing with the men when the plot became known. The foreigners said that the authorities would be unable to take action against such a large number of men, as by taking legal proceedings against so many people the authorities would be afraid of losing their good name among the foreign Powers.—I did not make any such statement as this on my own initiative; the question was put to me by the authorities, and I merely assented.



How could the authorities know what was in the minds of others? Certainly you must have made this statement yourself.—I did not; I knew nothing about the alleged facts.

Is this [a Japanese sword] yours?—Such a dangerous weapon could not be mine.

Did you not lend this sword to O Talkeui, of Whanghai-do? He said he got it from you, and took it to Syen Chuen with the object of assassinating the Governor-General.—I cannot understand why he said this. It is not mine, nor have I ever given it to him.

But you know him, do you not?—Yes, I do. When I saw him under arrest, I recognised him as an artisan employed at a porcelain works.

Then the statement that you gave him the sword must be true, must it not?—No, I never gave it to him.

The next prisoner called up to be put through the ordeal of questioning was Yi Choon-ha aged 34, a man with well cut features and piercing eyes. He denied being a local leader, a prominent member, or even an ordinary member of the New People's Society. He denied having ever called upon Messrs. Wells, Baird, and Moffett to discuss the "plot," nor did he go to the railway station to kill the Governor-General. He said that the police knew that he was not at the station on the dates mentioned. The Court asked how it was possible for the police to remember every one of the enormous number of men who were at the station, to which the prisoner replied that the Chief of Police knew him quite well. Accused also denied having met certain foreigners—including Messrs. Wells and Moffett—at a meeting held in the Taisong School, and said he knew nothing about the alleged speeches of the foreigners urging the "conspirators" to push on with their scheme until they attained their end.

#### "CONSPIRACY," CHRISTIAN BOOKS, AND CHRISTMAS CELEBRATION.

By the Court: But did you not go to Seoul about this time?—Yes. I went on business in connection with the sale of Christian books. I was a member of a committee which managed the sale of these works.

You received a telegram from Underwood in Seoul instructing you to proceed to the capital.—Yes.

Did you not then complain to An Taikuk that you were greatly annoyed at

receiving such a summons when you were busily engaged in making preparations for carrying out the plot? An then told you that it was a good opportunity for you to get the opinion of the chief of the New People's Society, and urged you to go.—No; that cannot be true, for I never met An.

So you went to Seoul, where you learned from Underwood that Count Terauchi was about to leave, and would reach Pyong-yang on November 27th. You were also instructed to return to Pyong-yang at once and make the necessary preparations for assassinating Count Terauchi. Underwood added that he would arrange for the Koreans' views of the situation to be made generally known when they had succeeded in their plot against the Governor-General. He also told you to report on your interview with him to Baron Yun at Kaisong.—This is altogether wrong. The facts are these. The number of subscribers for the Christian monthly magazine was increasing steadily in North and South Pyongan-do, and it was in connection with this matter that I went up to Seoul. I asked for permission to establish in these provinces branch offices for the sale of the Christian publications, but was refused. I left the capital on November 24th and reached Kaisong next day, just in time to celebrate Christmas. [The dates given are according to the old style calendar, which is a month behind the new calendar.]

So you saw Baron Yun. You gave him Underwood's message, and Yun approved the scheme, and also instructed you to return to Pyong-yang and carry out the plot with the other members of the Society.—No, this is not true.

You returned to Pyong-yang the following day, but your party had already got information that the Governor-General was coming on the 28th. On the evening of your arrival (the 27th) you met the other conspirators at the Taisong school, distributed revolvers to them, and instructed them as to where they were to stand on the platform when the Governor-General arrived.—I know nothing about all this.

#### "CONSPIRATOR'S" INTERVIEW WITH THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

Count Terauchi arrived in due course, but did not alight from the train. You learned that he would come back next day, and you all accordingly returned to the station next morning, all armed as

before. The Governor-General drove to the Kuyang Club, where a reception was given in his honour. You sought an opportunity to shoot him, but found he was too well guarded.—It is not true. I attended the reception, and was summoned to the Governor-General, who spoke to me and urged me to continue working for the welfare of the province. Had I been a man with wicked intentions, I should not have been called over to speak to the Governor-General.

The Presiding Judge (smiling): That was because the Governor-General did not really know you. You also went to New Wiju station, did you not?—No.

But you were seen in the third-class waiting-room, and you were locked in when the Governor-General's train arrived.—This never happened to me.

On the same day that you attended the reception given to the Governor-General you went to a meeting of conspirators at the Taisong school, when Moffett observed that the Koreans were a people of little courage and determination. You then decided to make one more attempt upon the Governor-General when he started on his return journey next day, but again failed to accomplish your end.—No, it is not true.

In October last you made another attempt to assassinate the Governor-General on his way to the Yalu bridge. Then, when the members of your Society began to be arrested for being concerned in this plot, you asked Moffett, Welles, Baird, Graham Lee, and one other foreigner to take care of the revolvers for you. You gave them the weapons packed in five orange boxes. Is that so?—No. I have never touched a revolver.

#### MISSIONARY'S MEMORIAL TO THE GOVERNMENT-GENERAL.

Moffett then addressed a memorial to the Government-General, asking why you had been arrested. This inquiry not being answered to his satisfaction, Moffett told you that while it might be impossible for you to avoid being examined by the authorities, you should not confess anything. He particularly warned you that in no circumstances whatever should you disclose the fact that foreigners had been consulted in connection with the plot, nor should you disclose the names of any foreigners as being in any way concerned with the plot.—That is not the case.

The reason you do not confess this to-day is that you were told by Moffett not to do so, is it not?—No.

Your associates all agree in saying that you were one of the principal figures in the New People's Society, and that you had the main details of the plot in your hands, assuming command in place of Chang Sung-cho.—I do not know why others should have said this about me, but I declare my innocence of the charges made against me.

#### QUESTIONS BY COUNSEL FOR DEFENCE.

Mr. Miyake, one of the counsel for the defence, here rose and asked the Court's permission to ask a question regarding the reception given to the Governor-General at the Kuyang Club. Permission being given, counsel asked accused at what time the reception was over. Accused said he did not remember exactly, but he thought the proceedings terminated at about 8.30 p.m., and it was about 10 p.m. when he reached home.

By the Court: Did you not go to a meeting at the Taisong school on the way home?—No.

In reply to questions by another barrister, accused said that about the middle of September his wife entered a hospital in Pyong-yang.

#### PASTOR'S "CONFESSION" UNDER TORTURE.

An Kyong nok, aged 30, a pastor, denied being a member of the New People's Society, or having gone to Pyongyang railway station with the object of shooting the Governor-General. He denied all knowledge of the Governor's visit at the time. He admitted having "confessed" all these "facts" at the police headquarters, but declared that he was forced to do so under torture.

#### BOMBS FOR ATTACKING A GOLD MINE.

Kim Eung-cho, aged 56, a grey-haired man with a long beard, said he knew nothing about the New People's Society. Asked by the Court whether he had mortgaged his land for ¥200 three or four years ago, accused denied having done so, but said he had lent the deeds to another party for an amount he could not now remember.

By the Court: You pledged your land certificate for that amount, and with the money you had some bombs made for use in an attack on a gold-mine at Pukchin, where it was intended to seize ample funds to enable the Society to carry out its plans. The bombs were duly prepared and sent to a certain man in the Pukchin district, but on the way they were accidentally dropped. The mau-

carrying them was killed, while the others who were with him ran away. Do you know these facts?

The accused mumbled some reply, whereupon the Court interpreter, quite a young man, angrily shouted the question again. The Presiding Judge motioned to the interpreter to be less demonstrative, and the almost terrified accused looked greatly relieved at the Judge's intervening on his behalf. He then replied that he did not know the alleged facts stated.

By the Court: Did you proceed to Pyong-yang station to shoot the Governor-General?—No. To have designs on another man's life is not what a man of my declining years thinks about.

But an old man sometimes craves for undesirable things—*toshiyori no hiya mizu* [cold water for an old man] as a Japanese proverb has it.—I admitted having gone to the railway station when I was examined by the police, but this was "under pressure or hard treatment." I admitted just whatever they asked me, simply to save my lingering life.

When told by the Court that his associates had given evidence against him, accused again denied his complicity in any plot, and said that such an idea would be impossible for a weak old man like himself.

#### A DRUGGIST'S EVIDENCE.

A man named Sin Sang-ho, aged 38, formerly engaged as a pharmacist in the hospital conducted by Dr. Wells at Pyong-yang, was next examined. He said he was not a member of the New People's Society, nor had he ever gone to the railway station with the object of killing the Governor-General. He was busy with his work at the hospital, and was not concerned in any plot. At the police headquarters, however, he had been subjected to such unbearable tortures that he was compelled to "confess" his complicity.

#### HOTEL-KEEPER'S EXAMINATION.

The last man to be examined before the mid-day interval was Yun Syong-un, aged 37, who said he had no religious convictions. He joined the New People's Society on the suggestion of An Chang-ho, but was not told that the object of the Society was to assassinate high officials, start a war of independence at a favourable opportunity, and so on. Accused said he formerly kept a hotel at Pyong-yang in partnership with Yi Seung-hun;

the latter's share in the concern was ¥7,000, and accused's share was ¥2,000. The partnership, however, was dissolved three years ago. The hotel was run in the ordinary way of business, and was not maintained for the purpose of facilitating meetings of members of the New People's Society. Accused denied having gone to the railway station on four occasions with the object of shooting the Governor-General, nor had he ever consulted any foreigner in regard to the alleged plans of the conspirators. He denied all complicity in any plan for the assassination of the Governor-General.

By the Court: You have been engaged in carrying on a hotel business with Yi Seung-hun. Is it not only natural to presume that you did have thoughts of killing the Governor-General?—No.

In reply to further questions, accused denied having packed revolvers in orange-boxes and handing them over for safe keeping to five foreigners. He denied that Mr. Moffett had told him to persist in denying all knowledge of the conspiracy, and to keep absolutely secret the names of the foreigners concerned in the plot. Accused said he had no acquaintances among the foreigners, and the evidence which had been given against him by others of the accused must have been forced from them by torture.

At this stage the Court adjourned for tiffin.

The afternoon session of the ninth day's proceedings was opened with the examination of Chyong Ik-uo, aged 50, an elder in the Presbyterian Church. Accused denied being a member of the New People's Society, or being concerned in the alleged conspiracy. He said he had three intimate foreign friends, all missionaries—Messrs. Blair, Baird, and Graham Lee. He denied having consulted these gentlemen about the "conspiracy," and said that any such plot would be quite against the teachings of Christianity.

By the Court: At one of your meetings Moffett expressed his regret at the fall of the Han Dynasty, and also expressed his satisfaction upon learning that you and others were plotting against the Governor-General, while he also urged you to carry out your plans as decisively as possible, as he would do everything he could to protect you.—No. I never heard the foreigner mentioned say any such thing.

Wells also told you that he grieved over the fall of the Dynasty, and en-

couraged you to proceed with your plans.—No.

In the beginning did you ask Baird and Blair to take part in the conference?—No, I never did so.

When the Governor-General was expected in 1910 you and others met at the Taisong school, and under the superintendence of Chang Eungchin you distributed revolvers among those present, and instructed them to fire when they had an opportunity. Afterwards, you all went to the railway station.—I never went either to the school or the station.

Did you not admit in your examination that you went to the station armed with a revolver, and stood near a monument?—If I did say so, I must have been in a very dispirited condition. I simply said "yes" to the questions put to me.

A series of questions was then put to accused relating to the advice alleged to have been given by foreigners in regard to the manner of carrying out the assassination, the concealment by foreign missionaries of revolvers, and Mr. Moffett's alleged admonition not to confess anything, and particularly not to give the names of the foreigners "involved in the present plot." All these questions accused denied to be true, whereupon the Court informed accused that he had been the first man examined on these points, and that unless he had said these things the authorities could not know anything about them.

Previously accused said he heard about all these things for the first time at the police headquarters. It was true that he went to Seoul, on the instruction of Mr. Underwood, but this was to discuss matters relating to a monthly report on Christian work in Korea. It was not true that he had been asked by An Tai-kuk to ascertain from Mr. Underwood about the departure of the Governor-General from Seoul. He had denied this to the police, but he was beaten until he admitted all the above statements. It was true that he had called on Baron Yun, at Kuisong on his way back from Seoul, but he had not been asked to do so by the foreigner in Seoul.

#### STUDENTS' ASSOCIATIONS AND THEIR OBJECT

An Sai whan, aged 25, teacher of Japanese at the Sungsil school, Pyong-yang, was next called. Accused, who spoke Japanese fluently, said he knew nothing about the New People's Society. There was a students' society at the school for

helping students who were in financial difficulties and for generally promoting knowledge and study. Accused denied that the real object of the society was the assassination of prominent officials, and also denied that inflammatory speeches had been made to the students. Questioned as to why he had admitted the contrary at the police headquarters, accused said his admissions must have been made in "special circumstances."

By the Court: When the annexation was declared in August 1910 the teachers and students at your school expressed great dissatisfaction. After several discussions it was decided to call a meeting at the Taisong school. Do you know this?—I was at Pyong-yang at the time, but never went to the Taisong school.

Several foreigners, including Blair, Wells, and Baird, attended this meeting and took part in the conference.—I know nothing about this.

Baird was the principal of the Sungsil school, to which you belonged. Do you not remember that he expressed his disagreement with the annexation of Korea?—I have already said that I did not go to the meeting in the Taisong school.

You should be able to remember whether foreigners generally wished that Heaven would restore the fallen Man Dynasty.—No, I don't know.

A heated discussion took place at the Taisong school meeting as to what should be done—protest hastily and forcibly, or go to work quietly and plot against the Japanese authorities. The foreigners recommended the latter course, and endorsed the proposal to assassinate the high officials. This cannot be true.

Later on you were instructed from Seoul to assassinate the Governor-General, and you and others went several times to the station armed with revolvers, but each time you were misled by false reports.—I myself have my studies in the forenoon, and in the afternoon I have my own pupils to teach. It is clear that I had no time for such enterprises.

It would certainly not matter if you did leave the school on such a mission, for the school itself was the incarnation of conspiracy.—It was not.

#### COMPETITION AMONG "CONSPIRATORS."

On the receipt of news from Seoul that the Governor-General really was coming, there was some competition between the various schools concerned in the plot as to which should be the one to kill the Governor-General. An Tai-kuk and Ok

Kwan-pin made a personal visit to announce the coming of the Governor-General, and you and your party, all armed with revolvers, went to the railway station. Is that so?—I have never met An Tai-kuk, Ok Kwan-pin, or Chang Eung-chin, who are regarded as ringleaders.

Are these men the ringleaders?—I understand them to be so regarded, judging from their names being so frequently repeated in Court.

Did you go to the station?—No.

The following day you again went to the station, and stood near a Japanese hotel.—Since last year I have been suffering from brain trouble, and made it a rule not to go out even when I had no school duties.

#### "ANTI-JAPANESE" SPIRIT.

Did you not try to kill the Governor-General because of your anti-Japanese feelings?—During the Russo-Japanese war I received certain valuable favours, and I certainly do not harbour any ill-feeling against the *naichi-jin* (men from Japan). We ought to welcome them coming to this country. I entered my school through the recommendation of a Japanese, and have since been seeking new knowledge.

#### MORE ABOUT THE OBTAINING OF "CONFESSIONS."

When the Governor-General drove to the Kuiyan Club you were ready to shoot him, but could not get a favourable opportunity. Next morning you went again to the station, and saw the Governor-General pass before you, but he was too closely guarded for you to attack him. You admitted this at the police headquarters and to the Procurator.—It is not so. I was suffering from brain trouble, and was a patient at the hospital at the time, as may be easily proved. I was also told that I was suffering from consumption, and I was really very ill at Pyong-yang at this time. When I was summoned by the police, I noticed that those who answered freely were allowed to return home. I thought of following their example, although I had really nothing to say. As my feeble body became weaker, however, I think I said "yes" three or four times in answer to questions. At the Procurator's Office I was told that I might be sent back to the police headquarters to be subjected to painful treatment which would perhaps kill me. I shuddered at the thought,

and admitted having gone once to the station. My original intention was to enter the Government service. I studied the Japanese language with—

The Judge: Stop that story! Do you not mean that you first of all confessed thinking you would be released from the charge, but when you realised that you had also to be examined at the Procurator's Office, you decided to withdraw your original statement?—No, it is not so. I beg that the Court will take into consideration my physical condition.

#### NAPOLEON AND WASHINGTON.

Do you remember these? [A bundle of students' composition papers was shown to accused.]—Yes—no. I was not concerned with them. My school duties were simply to teach Japanese.

These compositions are full of forcible writings dealing with the careers of Napoleon and Washington. They were found in your room.—I am a teacher of Japanese, and have nothing to do with the students' compositions.

Having denied being concerned in an attempt to kill Count Terauchi on his way to the Yalu, accused begged the Court to deliver an impartial judgement upon him.

The next prisoner examined, Kim Eung-nok, aged 29, a graduate of the Sungsil school, denied having joined the New People's Society, or having gone to the railway station with a revolver. "I had to admit all this," said accused, "in order to preserve my life."

Chong Chu-hiun, aged 21, formerly a student of a mission school at Pyong-yang, said that he had no religious convictions. He had joined an organisation which was alleged by the authorities to be a branch of the New People's Society, but he knew nothing about this. He was acquainted with An Tai-kuk, but had never called upon the latter at the Tai-keuk Bookstore, Pyong-yang, nor had he ever been urged by An to make up his mind to carry out the plot against the life of the Governor-General. Accused also denied having gone to Syen Chuen station to attack the Governor-General on November 27th.

Kim Tong-won, aged 29, employed as a teacher in one of Mr. Moffett's schools, said the former principal was Mr. Baird. Accused denied being a member of the New People's Society, or having approached Messrs. Baird and Moffett in regard to the alleged conspiracy. He also de-

nled having carried five boxes of revolvers to foreigners' houses for safe keeping.

Kim Tu-wha, aged 49, a teacher in the Taisong school, said he joined the New People's Society on the recommendation of An Chang-ho. He thought the Society was known at his school by the name of the Young Men's Companion Society. He denied having attempted the life of Count Teranchi in 1910 and 1911. Accused said he was suffering from consumption, and could not have taken part in any such plot. He once went to Japan in connection with some educational matters.

#### ALLEGED KOREAN CONSPIRATORS IN TOKYO.

Asked by the Court whether the real motive of his visit to Japan was not to assassinate certain high officials in the Tokyo Government, accused replied in the negative, adding that the entries in his diary would prove that every day he was visiting various schools.

Choi Chun-hang, aged 35, principal of a school at Pyong-yang, said he was a member of the New People's Society, but the object of the Society was not assassination, nor was he concerned in any plot. In April 1909 he went to Japan to study educational affairs there.

By the Court: Did you instruct the Korean students in Tokyo to attack Prince Yamagata and Prince Katsura?—No, certainly not.

We understand that the Korean students were often seen wandering about near the residences of these distinguished men, and when they went away for a journey the students used to track them down to Shimabashi.—I know nothing about this.

But Yun Syong-un and another man have given evidence to the effect that they were selected to cause the Korean student to assassinate the high officials in Tokyo. This does not seem to be other than true.—It is not a fact.

#### "ANTI JAPANESE" POETRY.

You have a reputation as a composer of songs, have you not?—I write a little sometimes.

What sort of songs do you compose?—I have written one on the encouragement of study.

You might also have composed a song with anti-Japanese sentiments, might you not? No.

This concluded the examination, and the proceedings were adjourned until next day.

## TENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### THE EXAMINATION OF THE "RINGLEADERS."

#### INTERESTING EVIDENCE.

SEOUL, July 11.

Yesterday's proceedings marked the conclusion of an important stage in the proceedings of this case, inasmuch as the examination of the accused was concluded, after ten days' hearing. The examination of the men who are regarded as the ringleaders of the "conspiracy" was left to the last, and in view of the importance attached to their testimony, the Court yesterday was crowded with an expectant audience. There were about twenty foreigners present, and they followed the proceedings with evident interest. Even the Judges seemed to be more alert and stern yesterday, while Major-General Akashi seemed particularly interested in the examination of Iyu Tong-sol. While this man was being questioned, the Major-General sat close behind the Presiding Judge, and with his hands resting on the handle of his long sword, kept his eyes steadily fixed on the prisoner's face as he replied to the Court's questions. From this little incident it will be gathered that the proceedings here, although nominally in an ordinary Criminal Court, are very different from those in Japan Proper. For example, the Judges do not wear robes as in Japan, but are dressed in a semi-military uniform, with buttons, braid, and epaulettes, and the general appearance of the Court is more like a Court-Martial than a Civil Court.

Yesterday the six remaining men to be examined were brought to the front, immediately facing the Judges' dais. They were Iyu Tong-sol, Im Chi-chong, Yang Kitak, Ok Kwan-pin, An Tai-kuk, and Yi Seung-hun. The seventh of the so-called "ringleaders," Baron Yun, had already been examined some days previously. Four of the accused—Im, Yang, Ok, and An—wore the convict's short kimono and drawers of reddish grey, these men having been sentenced last year to various terms of imprisonment for violation of the Peace Preservation Regulations. All the accused looked fairly well with the exception of Baron Yun, who appeared to be rather weak and worn-out. Before the proceedings were commenced Im Do-

myong, who was sitting in the second row of the accused, was seized by a fit. He would have fallen to the ground had not the men on either side supported him. He was carried out of the Court by police and warders, and laid on the ground near the entrance to the Court. His head was bathed with cold water, after which he was carried away to another building, where a doctor examined him and found the man to be suffering from acute temporary congestion of the brain. The unconscious man was handled with care, and every attention shown to him.

The actual proceedings yesterday commenced at about 9.40 a.m. with the examination of An Tai-kuk, aged 38, a man of bold appearance and good physique. In answer to the Court, he stated that he knew Yi Seung-hun, who was secretary at the Taikeuk book store, Pyong-yang, where accused was employed as a clerk. He also knew Yang Ki-tak, formerly on the staff of the *Tai Han Mail Shimpo*, with which journal accused was also once connected. He also knew Baron Yun, whom he met at an athletic meeting held at Pyong-yang by the students of Taisong school. Accused also admitted that he knew An Chang-ho, founder of the Taikeuk bookstore, where accused was engaged as salesman, and said he also knew Lyu Tong-sol, whom he met for the first time at a meeting of a society in Seoul, which, however, was not connected with the New People's Society.

By the Court: Have you not been a member of the New People's Society for five or six years?—No.

Do you know that the object of the Society was to build a military school, recover Korean national rights, start a war of independence when Japan was at war with some other Power, assassinate high officials, and so on?—Some years ago I was told that the Koreans living in America had organised a Society named the Sin Min Hoi (New People's Society), with the object of propagating education and industry among the Korean people. I approved the objects of this Society, and agreed to pay ¥2 as entrance fee, but I was never asked to pay this money, so I never joined the Society.

In 1909, when Prince Ito—then Resident-General—made a tour of inspection through Korea, did you and your party send men to various railway stations with instructions to assassinate him?—No.

In 1910 Lyu came to Pyong-yang on behalf of Baron Yun, and at the hotel kept by Yun Syong-un met you and your

party, and discussed a plan for assassinating Count Terauchi. You approved the scheme, and collected and distributed revolvers among your party.—I did not.

There is a man among those now accused who has said that he received a revolver from you, and thus armed went to Pyong-yang station.—I gave no revolvers to anyone.

Do you remember an athletic meeting held by the students of Taisong school at Pyong-yang?—I remember one meeting being held on the military parade-ground.

Do you know that Baron Yun was at that meeting?—I remember seeing him twice—once at an athletic meeting, and again at the ceremony held for closing a school for the summer vacation. This ceremony was held, I think, at the Taikeuk book store.

You addressed those present, and proposed that Yi Wan-yong and Yi Yong-ku (members of the former Korean Government) should be assassinated, and called for volunteers. Yi Chai-myong offered himself for the service, saying he was unmarried, and therefore might be selected. Do you remember this?—I do not.

You thought the task too much for Yi Chai-myong alone, and nominated two or three others to help him. Yi Seung-hun did the same, and all these men were sent to Seoul.—It is not so.

Baron Yun then left the matter in the hands of you and Yi, with orders that you two should take command and give the assassins their instructions.—It is not true.

Were you not arrested about that time and was it not in connection with the attempted assassination of Count Yi?—I was arrested, and kept in custody for about five months. I was charged with being concerned in the attack on Count Yi.

Did you hold a celebration when you came out of jail?—I did not, but my friends did.

#### DISPUTED " EVIDENCE."

You told them that you were released because you persistently denied everything you were questioned about. You also said you had been tortured, but still you would not confess. You told your friends that in the event of them being arrested at any time, they should not confess. In this bombastic way you addressed your friends, did you not?—It is not true. Some policemen and gendarmes were present on that occasion, and if the Court

will summon those officers and examine them, the truth can be ascertained.

Pyen In syo and another man have given evidence that they heard you speak to this effect.—It does not matter to me if ten million men say they heard what I am sure I did not say.

At the time of the annexation did you say at a meeting that it was inadvisable to allow the annexation to be effected without protest, and that speeches should be made opposing Japan's action?—It is not true.

Did you express your opinion at the Taisong school?—No.

#### THE ACCUSATIONS AGAINST FOREIGNERS.

There was a counter-opinion to yours that the suggested speech-making was of no use, and that a secret rather than a public campaign should be started. Finally it was agreed that the question of policy should be submitted for decision to the foreigners in Pyong-yang, with whom you were rather closely connected. A committee, consisting of Ok Song-pin, Cha Li-sik and Chvong Ikno, was appointed to call upon Wells, Baird, Morris, Swallen, Holderoff, Graham Lee, and Bernheisel to obtain their opinion.—It is not true.

The foreigners gave their opinion against your suggestion, holding that you Koreans should pretend to be subjugated to the Japanese, but that you should secretly plot against the new Administration. You ought to remember this.—No it is not a fact.

You say it is not a fact, but Cha Li-sik, Ok Song-pin, and Chvong Ikno have admitted these facts.—I do not know what these men have said. For myself, I know nothing about the matter.

It was also suggested that Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak should be consulted, so you and others proceeded to Seoul, and found that Yun and Yang agreed with the foreigners. They were against speech-making, but in favour of assassinating high officials, and told you that they would let you know when to carry out the plans.—It is not true.

But all the accused from Pyong-yang have admitted these facts, and so has Kim Tong-won.—It does not affect me how many men may have said so.

In August 1910 orders were received from the headquarters of the Society in Seoul for representatives of the Pyong-yang branch to proceed to the capital, so you, Ok Kwan pin, and one other went to Seoul.—No. I did not go to Seoul in August last year.

You assembled at Im Chi-chong's house outside the West Gate. Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak told you that the Governor-General was going to Pyong-yang Province. You were told to station groups of men at various places along the route ready to assassinate the Governor-General. You were warned that Pyong-yang was well guarded by soldiers, whereas Syen-Chuen was not, and there were more foreign residents there. It was thought probable that the Governor-General would alight at Syen-Chuen to exchange greetings with the foreigners, so that this place would be more suitable for the attack. Moreover, it would be very convenient for you to have the protection of these foreigners. Therefore Syen-Chuen was considered the most important place for attempting to carry out the plot, and the best men available should be sent to the railway station there. Yun and Yang Kitak also told to have men at every station beyond Pyong-yang so that the attack could be repeated at one place if it failed at another.—I met Im and Yang in Seoul, but not Baron Yun, and I did not have any conversation with anybody about a conspiracy.

So you returned from Seoul to Pyong-yang to tell your party what had been decided, and Ok went to the places north of Pyong-yang on a similar errand.—I know nothing about this.

While making preparations for carrying out the plot a messenger came from Seoul reporting that Count Terauchi was coming on August 20th. You and your party accordingly went to the railway station, but found that the report was wrong.—No, it is not so.

On August 17th you and your followers also went to the station, and again found that you had been wrongly informed.—I was then in Seoul. [This reply, if correctly reported, does not agree with the preceding statement made by accused that he was not in Seoul during August.]

In September Ok Kwan-pin came back to Pyong-yang and said the Governor-General was expected on the 15th or 16th. Again you all went to the railway station, but once more found you had been misinformed.—It is not true. I can obtain evidence to prove I was then in Seoul.

The same messenger later gave you another false report, as the result of which you went to Syen Chuen on the 20th, and on finding out the mistake, you returned to Pyong-yang.—No, this is



wrong. I have not been in Syen Chuen since 1905.

A school teacher from Seoul came to Pyong-yang in November, and told you to proceed to the capital to see Baron Yun. You, Ok Kwan-pin, and Yi Seung-hun went to Seoul, where you were told by Yun that the Governor-General was definitely coming to Pyong-yang. Yun heard this from a Japanese official in the Government-General, and Yang Ki-tak also heard it from a Korean official. Yun and Yang warned you to make careful preparations for carrying out your scheme.—It is not true.

On the way back, Ok Kwan-pin purposely went by way of Whanghai-do.—I do not know.

When you got back to Pyongyang you called a meeting of members of your Society and told them the Governor-General was coming. You also assembled the students and teachers of the Taisong school, the Sungsil school, and the other school, and told them what was going to be done. A number of foreigners were also present, and took part in the conference.—I do not know anything about this.

#### ALLEGATIONS OF FOREIGN HELP AND PROTECTION TO "CONSPIRATORS."

Yi Tokwhan then addressed the foreigners on behalf of the Society, saying that he was sorry that he had had to request their attendance so often in connection with the plan, but assuring them that this time the report was reliable. He then asked the foreigners to give the members of the Society their protection, and requested them to publish to the world the real aims and hopes of the Korean people when the plan for assassinating the Governor-General had been successfully carried out. To this Moffett replied that he was very much distressed to find, on returning to Korea, that the Han Dynasty had fallen. It was, however, very pleasing for him to learn that you were now going to assassinate the Governor-General, and he concluded by saying that he would give you all every assistance and protection in his power. Wells also made a speech, seconding the remarks made by Moffett, and declaring that the idea of the proposed assassination was pleasing to him and should be carried out.—I know nothing about this, as I was not in Pyong-yang at the time.

Preparations for the assassination were pushed forward, but nothing more was heard about the Governor-General's com-

ing. Then a telegram was received by Chyong Ik no from Underwood, in Seoul, asking him to proceed to the capital on business about the Christian congregation. When Chong told you this, you suggested that he might try and learn from the foreigner something more about the Governor-General's plans. So Chong, accompanied by another man, went to Seoul.—I was myself in Seoul at this time, and knew nothing about Chong's visit.

These two men returned to Pyongyang on November 25th, and a report was received that the Governor-General was coming on the 27th. You therefore assembled your party and made further preparations for carrying out your plans.—I was not in Pyongyang at this time.

Yi Seung-hun, who had also been in Seoul, came back to Pyong-yang and then proceeded to Nap Chyongjong, while you, with a party of men from Whanghai-do, led by Kim Kwi, went to Syen Chuen. You all met at the mission school there and talked over your plans.—I was not in Pyong-yang nor in Syen Chuen in November that year.

On the 27th Yi reached Syen Chuen with a party of about 35 men from Nap Chyongjong. You then proceeded to the railway-station—about 150 men altogether—but as the Governor-General did not leave his ear, you could not carry out your scheme.—This cannot be true, since I did not go to Syen Chuen.

You and all your followers assembled at the mission school in the evening, and you and Yi Seung-hun urged the men to succeed at all costs in the attempt to be made the following day. Accordingly, you all went to the station again. The students were lined up on the platform in files, and young men from your party, disguised as students, stood among them. The Governor-General, on alighting from the train, walked along the files saluting as he went, and then shook hands with McCune, the principal of the mission school, after which he returned to his ear. You failed to carry out the assassination partly because you could not tell the Governor-General from the other military officers, and partly because a very strict guard was kept.—It is not true. I was then in Seoul, and did not go to Syen Chuen.

#### PRISONER'S PROTEST AGAINST "CONFESSION" AS EVIDENCE.

The above facts have been proved by the evidence given by the men from

Pyong-yang, who say that you were frequently there and used to attend the meetings held at the Taikuk book store and at the Taishong school, and that you went to Syen Chuen at the head of a party of 24 men.—All the men who said this declared in open Court that they were compelled to admit these statements under unbearable torture. Evidence obtained in such a way cannot be accepted.

Do you know Yi Chi-kenn, a servant employed by Im Chi-chong?—I know him by sight only; I did not know his name.

According to this man's statement, you often met Baron Yun, Ok Kwan-pin, and Yang Kitak, at Im Chi-chong's house outside the West Gate, Seoul, during August, September, October, and November 1910, and talked over the conspiracy.—I went to Seoul in August 1910, and met Im Chi-chong at his house, but I have never met Ok and others in the circumstances alleged.

Kang Mun-chip, one of the staff of the *Tai Pan Mui Shing*, gave evidence to the same effect. Is this not true?—No; I never saw Yun in 1910.

Yun made a similar statement, and said that he frequently met you in Im's house in the circumstances mentioned.—It is absolutely wrong. In the Procurator's Office I heard that Kil Chin-hyong had stated that I went to Pyong-yang, so I demanded that he should be brought back and questioned by me, before the Procurator, but my request was not granted. As for Baron Yun's statements, I did not quite understand what it was he said here in this Court, and so cannot say anything about it, but I request the Court to permit me to question Kil directly on this point.

Did you not strike Kil when he said that you were one of the leaders in South Pyongan province?—I was simply forced to admit in the Procurator's Office that I had persuaded the people at Pyong-yang to take part in the conspiracy, but Kil made a false statement against me quite unnecessarily.

But why did you strike him in Court?—I did so in a fit of anger.

You must have struck Kil because he confessed that it had been agreed among your party not to confess anything at all.—No.

Then you must have struck Kil because he stated that he was a fellow-member of the Society, and went with you to Syen Chuen.—He said here in the open Court that he had been forced to say what he did under torture.

The fact of the matter is that Kil confessed to all the facts, and this naturally involved you, at which you got angry and attacked him.—No, that is not so.

Were you not examined in the Procurator's Court side by side with Yang Chom-mung? This man also said you went to Syen Chuen. Were you not very angry with him when he said so?—I was asked in the Procurator's Office whether I put up at Yang's house at Syen Chuen in September and November 1910. I said that I went there once several years previously, but not in the months mentioned. Yang was then brought before the Procurator, and only after he had been asked the question five times did he say that I had been at his house in September and October, 1910.

You behaved in a rather disorderly manner in Court, did you not?—Yang did wrong in stating that I was at his house on those days when he knew I was not.

Is it not because you really were there that so many others have also testified to the same effect?—No.

You said that you were released from jail once before because you would not confess to being connected with the assault on Count Yi Wan-yong. This time you also thought that you might be saved if you refused to confess, but on finding that Yang had admitted the facts, you lost control of your temper at the Procurator's Court. Is that not so?—No, it is not.

You were the leader of the movement in South Pyongan Province, and you should admit this in Court.—According to the statements made by my fellow-prisoners, they simply admitted just whatever the authorities asked them, even though they knew little or nothing about me.

You confessed everything at the Procurator's Office. These facts regarding your actions and movements could not have been created by the Procurator. It is unmanly for you, regarded as one of the leaders of your party, to now deny the facts at this time. It is not as though you could dream of being discharged simply by denying everything, as you did before. This cannot be done when evidence has all been prepared.—The charges against me cannot be true, for I was in Seoul at the time, and can produce evidence to prove it.

When you were examined last year on a charge of violating the Peace Preservation Law, you also denied the facts, but when judgement was delivered against

you, you submitted to it, and renounced your right to appeal to a higher Court. It seems to us that you simply enjoy telling lies.—The reason I did not appeal against that judgement is this. In the text of judgement it was stated that I was the principal of the Taisong school, and had formed a plan to settle at Su Kanto (West Chientao), where I intended to declare independence of Japan. The judgement was wrong in regard to the allegation about declaring independence, but it was quite true that I intended to settle in the place mentioned with a number of other men. I thought it of no use to appeal on this point, hence I accepted the judgement.

This closed the examination of accused.

The second prisoner to be examined was Yi Seung-hun, of whom so much has been heard in the course of the examination of the other accused. His age was stated to be 49, but he looks very much older. He has a pleasant face, and his hair and beard are grey. In reply to questions by the Court, accused said he was the president of a porcelain company in North Pyongan-do, and proprietor of the Tai-kenk book store in Pyong-yang. He had been formerly connected with various schools in the district. After a number of questions of minor importance had been put, the examination proceeded:—

By the Court: Did you attend a meeting of students of the Taisong School in the summer of 1909?—I did not.

Yes, you did. On that occasion Baron Yun made a speech in which he said that the political situation was very bad, and the Korean Premier must be assassinated. Yun, in asking for volunteers for this service, said they should be bachelors. Do you remember this?—No, I do not. I never attended any such meeting.

Did you see Yi Chai-myong offer himself for service?—No; I was not at the meeting.

Did you not then propose that men should be selected to assist Yi in carrying out this plot against the Premier, and nominate two men from North Pyongan-do, while An Tai-kuk agreed to get as many men as possible from South Pyongan-do?—This cannot be true. This information the Court believes was given by Kim Chan-o, one of the accused, but as a matter of fact he denied it at the police headquarters.

Did you go to Pyong-yang in August 1910 and have frequent consultations with

certain men as to what steps should be taken to oppose the political changes in Korea?—No.

During that month did you receive a message from the headquarters in Seoul of a Korean secret society, instructing you to proceed to the capital, an order which you obeyed, in company with An Tai-kuk and Ok Kwan-pin?—No; it is not true.

You all met at Im Chi-chong's house in Seoul and agreed to assassinate the Governor-General while on his tour of inspection through the country.—It is not so.

Did you then return to Pyong-yang by way of Whanghai-do, where you urged people to join the Society?—I have never done any such thing.

It was then proposed that revolvers should be obtained, and you sent 50 weapons from Antung to Pyong-yang. Afterwards you went to Seoul again and had another conference with Yun and Yang Ki-tak about the plot.—It is not true.

You later on made another visit to Seoul, returning via Syen Chuen.—I did not.

Did you go to Syen Chuen in August, September, and October 1910 to "receive" the Governor-General?—Never.

In November you received another message from the Seoul headquarters of the Society, asking that representatives be sent to take part in a conference about the plot.—I went to the capital in December (new calendar) 1910, but not for the purpose stated.

You again met at Chichong's house, and Baron Yun said the report of the Governor-General's movements was correct this time, and the members of the Society should make arrangements to assassinate him on the way.—That is not true.

So you and two others were instructed to return. Ok Kwan-pin first returned to Syen Chuen, followed by An Tai-kuk, but you remained in the capital for awhile to get further information regarding the Governor-General's movements.—It is not a fact.

You returned to Pyong-yang about November 27th, and calling the members of the Society together, told them to get ready to carry out the plot. You told them the report of the Governor-General's coming really was true this time, since you had got the information yourself.—It is impossible. I was in Seoul at the time.

At this meeting it was agreed that you and An Tai-kuk should go to Syen Chuen, this place being chosen as a suitable spot to attempt the assassination because there were many foreigners there, the police were believed to be less strict, and the station being larger than others in the vicinity was more suitable for your purpose.—It is not true.

You then got news that the Governor-General was leaving Seoul for Wiju on November 27th, so you at once left Pyongyang for Syen Chuen with a party of men latent upon carrying out your plot.—It would be impossible for me to have done so. I returned to Pyongyang from the capital that day, having with me two sons of Mr. Yi Chai-keun, formerly the Korean Minister of Education. I had been asked by these two young gentlemen to take them to the porcelain factory of which I am director. On the 28th and 29th I was showing them over the works, and had no time to go to Syen Chuen, even if I had wanted to.

Prior to your departure from Pyongyang to Syen Chuen, via Nap Chyongjong, you assembled the local members of your Society and addressed them on the subject of the plot, saying that the scheme to assassinate the Governor-General was based on the unanimous wish of the people of the 13 provinces of Korea.—This cannot be true, for I did not go to Syen Chuen, and I can prove this by producing certain telegrams if the Court wishes.

You dropped in at Nap Chyongjong on your way to Syen Chuen, and at the former place you met the local members of the Society at the Kaming school, and instructed them to start for Syen Chuen via Chyongju.—I have already said that I did not go to Syen Chuen.

At Syen Chuen your party numbered 150 men, including those from Pyongyang, Whanghai-do, Nap Chyongjong Chyongju, and Kwaksan. Did you all go to the station?

#### A JUDICIAL REBUKE TO COUNSEL.

Before accused could reply the Presiding Judge angrily turned to Mr. Okubo, a Japanese barrister, and Mr. Pak, a Korean lawyer, both appearing as counsel for the defence, and reprimanded them for talking together and thus annoying the Court. The two barristers had been whispering together for a minute or two during the examination.

Replying to question above mentioned, accused repeated that he was not in Syen Chuen at the time. He and the two young

gentlemen already referred to returned to Seoul on the 31st of the month, and he could not possibly have been at Syen Chuen.

By the Court: The Governor-General's train reached Syen Chuen in due course, but he did not alight. That night your party assembled at the mission school, and you gave an address in which you said the plot was in accordance with the voice of the 13 provinces, and that your followers should make a determined and courageous effort to carry out the plot the following day.—It is not true. I could not have been there.

#### MORE CHARGES AGAINST MR. MCCUNE.

Do you remember Mr. McCune saying that those who did not know the Governor-General could recognise him by looking out for the Japanese officer with whom he (Mr. McCune) would shake hands, at whom they should fire? Did you not instruct men to go to various stations along the line, so that if the attempt failed at one place it could be repeated at another, and did you not tell the youngest men among the party to get among the students who were lined up on the platform?—No. I did none of these things.

On the 28th you all went to the railway station. The Governor-General left his car and walked along the platform, saluting the files of students. Although all ready to fire your revolver, you did not shoot because you could not tell which was the Governor-General, and moreover a very strict guard was kept.—I know nothing about all this, because I was not there.

After you all returned to the mission school, did you not give vent to your displeasure in an address, in which you said the party—especially the men from Nap Chyongjong—were only good enough for such work as eating meals?—I made no such speech.

Afterwards you all drank together, and said that although this attempt had unfortunately failed, yet you would celebrate the event as a step towards the restoration of the Independence of the country.—I was not there; I was in Seoul.

A servant employed by Im Chi-chong has given evidence that you and Baron Yun often used to meet in Seoul at his master's house. A servant of Baron Yun's has made a similar statement.—It is untrue. I do not know Baron Yun.

We also have evidence of your going to Pyongyang, Nap Chyongjong, and Syen Chuen, and of your addressing the members of the Society there about the plot. Is it not a lie that you were in Seoul at this time?—No; it is true. I can obtain evidence to prove my assertion.

But so many men concerned in this case have given evidence to the same effect—that you did go to these places. There is little room for supposing they could have made a mistake.—The fact that I am in no way concerned in this affair would be clear if the Court examined the telegrams sent by the two young men who were in my care to their father, and examined certain witnesses who are acquainted with these facts.

One of the men at your porcelain factory has given evidence to the effect that you first talked this plot over in Seoul, and that you then went to Syen Chuen.—It is not true.

Your going to Pyongyang with two young noblemen is now mentioned for the first time, is it not?—I could not remember this before. I stated at the Procurator's Office that I was in Pyongyang on business. The police know that I went there with these two young men, because they took special precautions for their protection, as they were sons of a former Cabinet Minister.

This concluded the examination of this prisoner, and the Court adjourned for tiffin.

On the Court being re-opened, Ok Kwang-piu, the third of the so-called "ring-leaders" of the alleged conspiracy, was examined. He is a young man of 22, very slight build, and with quite a juvenile appearance generally. He was in convict's garb, being one of those sentenced to imprisonment some time ago for an offence against the Law for the Preservation of Public Peace. In answer to questions by the Court, accused said he had studied at the Taisong school at Pyongyang, and had afterwards spent a year at a school in Seoul. He left in the spring of 1910, and about May (new calendar) entered the office of the *Tai Han Mai-il Shinpo*. Yang Ki-tak was at that time the manager, but Im Chi-chong was not the editor. Accused stayed about six months in the office, but never became intimately acquainted with Yang Ki-tak. Accused knew An Tai-kuk from the time he was a student at the Taisong school, An being at the Taikuk book-store. He was much

older than accused, and they were never intimate friends. Accused said he knew Baron Yun, whom he met at Pyongyang for the first time about five years ago, when accused was at the Taisong school.

By the Court: While you were at the school did you attend an athletic meeting at the Minchan-dan?—No such meeting was held while I was at the school.

Perhaps you attended a meeting held in the summer of 1910, when you addressed the gathering, and urged the people to be loyal to their Sovereign [the Emperor of Korea] and faithful to their country?—Probably the Court refers to the closing ceremony at the school just before the summer vacation. I remember making some remarks to the effect that the people should be grateful for the consideration shown by their teachers towards them. If I had made any such speech as suggested by the Court, it is certain that the gendarmes and police who were present would have stopped me and dispersed the meeting on the ground that such remarks were detrimental to public peace and security.

What did you do when the office of the *Tai Han Mai-il Shinpo* was closed?—I went back to Pyongyang. I then went to North Pyongan-do to be a teacher.

Where were you at the time of the annexation in August 1910?—I did not know of the change being made at the time. I heard of it afterward when I was at Yangben.

Did you then go to Seoul?—No.

#### OFFICIAL SURVEILLANCE.

You went to Pyongyang, where the members of the New People's Society were divided in opinion as to what should be done—protest openly against annexation, or work secretly. The opinion of the foreign residents was sought, and they advised the members to go to work secretly. About the middle of August the Seoul headquarters of the Society asked that representatives be sent up to discuss certain matters, and you, An Tai-kuk, and Yi Seung-hun went up to the capital. Do you remember this?—When I was at Yangben I was constantly watched by the police—in fact, I had my meals under official surveillance. I do not know why I am asked whether I went to Seoul as a "representative"; I do not understand what the word is intended to mean.

We mean that you went to Seoul as a representative of your fellow-members of

the Society.—I have no fellow-members, and I was not sent to Seoul, as alleged.

You met Baron Yun in Seoul, who told you that the Governor-General was to be assassinated, and you were told to go back to Pyong-yang to prepare to carry out the plot.—I was in Yangben district, and had only seen Baron Yun once in four years.

#### ORATOR'S ALLEGED TOUR.

You were also told that the attempt on the Governor-General was to be made at a railway-station, and Syen Chuen was considered an ideal place for the purpose. Pyong-yang was thought good, but Syen Chuen was better because of the many foreign residents there, whom the Governor-General would probably leave his car to greet, which would give an excellent opportunity for carrying out the plot against him.—I did not go to Seoul at this time, and therefore I cannot understand why these questions are being put to me.

You are well-known as an eloquent speaker, so after your return to Pyong-yang you made a tour along the railway, stopping at various places to tell people about the doctrines of your Society, and encouraging them to be decisive in carrying out the object.—I am not an orator. Moreover, I cannot make either head or tail of the Court's questions.

So you do not understand the questions? Well, you first went to Nap Chyongjong to talk to Yi Kin-yop about the doctrine of the Society, and then you went to Syen Chuen. Do you remember it?—No, I do not. I do not know even the name of the man mentioned. Besides, at that time I had quite a company of gendarmes and police always watching me.

Is that so? Well, you then went to Syen Chuen station with a party of men, and you all carried revolvers, but the Governor-General did not arrive, as you had expected.—I don't know any such thing.

Once during September 1910 you returned to Yangben, whence you went to Seoul. There you got news that the Governor-General was going north again, so you went back to Pyong-yang and informed An Tai-kuk. You also reported the news to your followers at various places along the railway, and on September 15th—the date on which the Governor-General was expected to pass—you and your party again went to Syen Chuen station, armed with revolvers. You found

that once more you had been misled, and the Governor did not arrive.—I knew nothing at all about the supposed movements of the Governor-General, as I was at Yangben at this time. Not even in a dream did I ever think of going to the railway station with a revolver.

#### ALLEGED ALIBI IN COURT RECORDS.

In October Yi Chong-sun went to the Taikenk book-store and reported news of the coming of the Governor-General. Again you conveyed this news along the line, and again you went to Syen Chuen station, but once more you found that you had been wrongly informed.—Yi is a total stranger to me. As for my being in Pyong-yang at this time, if the Court will refer to the record of my examination in this Court last year on a charge of violating the Peace Preservation Law, it will be seen that I was not in Pyong-yang.

In November you again went to Seoul with Yi Seung-hun and An Tai-kuk.—I did not.

You returned north by way of Whang-hai-do, stopping at An-ak to visit the Yangsil School. Is that so?—I went to that school about November 20th for a visit of inspection.

#### OPPOSITION TO POLICY OF VIOLENCE.

Did that visit have any connection with this present conspiracy?—None whatever. But I went to Seoul about this time to persuade An Myung-keun to abandon the idea of attacking Count Yi Wan-yong.

Yes, you went to the capital with Kim Kwi, and met An Tai-kuk, Baron Yun, and Yang Ki-tak to talk over the execution of your plans.—No, I did not go to Seoul with Kim Kwi. This fact was proved in the criminal proceedings taken against me last year.

So you all talked the matter over, and about November 13th you went back to Pyong-yang and reported the result of the conference to the members of the Society at Syen Chuen, Chongju, Kwaksan, Pyong-yang. Did this mean that you had decided to carry out the plot?—No. About November 1910 I went to Seoul to see Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak to tell them what I thought about the assassination policy of An Myung-keun (brother of the murderer of Prince Ito), who had a scheme for assassinating Count Yi Wan-yong and other high officials in the former Korean Government. I expressed myself as being strongly opposed to any such scheme, and my views were warmly

endorsed by Baron Yun and Yang Kitak, both saying that if such outrages were attempted, the result could not be anything but unfortunate for Korea. They both asked me to do my utmost to persuade An to abandon his plan. I have not been connected in any way with this conspiracy.

You went to Chyongju with Kil Chin-hyong, called the local members of the Society together, and told them of the Governor-General's coming. You also invited them to go down to Syen Chuen to have a further discussion of your plans, and then yourself proceeded to the town.—It is not true.

In Syen Chuen you met the others at Yi Seung-hun's house, and you said that although you had been misled before, this time the news about the Governor-General was absolutely authentic. You all met again at Yi's house, and a committee was appointed to collect funds and purchase revolvers.—I know nothing about this.

You then proceeded to Wiju, where you met Yi Keni-tang, of New Wiju, and Kil Chin-hyong, of Pyong-yang, and made further arrangements for the attack on the Governor-General.—I request the Court to investigate the evidence more carefully.

At Kim Chang-whan's request, you addressed the students of the Yangsil school and urged them to join the secret movement for the sake of the country.—I never went to Wiju, nor did I make any such speech as alleged. If I made such a speech, there must be someone who heard it.

It is because there were people who listened to your remarks on that occasion that the matter has come to light.—I should like to discuss this point further with the Court.

You then went back to Syen Chuen from Wiju.—It is impossible, since I never went to Wiju.

#### MURDER OF PRINCE ITO CONDEMNED.

At Syen Chuen you assembled the members of your party and told them to bring themselves to think in the same way as An Chung-keun, the assassin of Prince Ito. There are many among the men now accused with you who heard this speech of yours.—I did not go to Syen Chuen, nor did I make such a speech as that mentioned. I am one of those men who believe that the assassination of Prince Ito was a wicked act which

did no good to Korea, and moreover hastened the day of annexation. This is my opinion, and I told An Myung-keun, the brother of the man who killed Prince Ito, what my views were in regard to assassination, and I tried to persuade him to abandon the plan he had formed to attack the former Korean Premier, as I have already told the Court.

You got information on November 26th that the Governor-General was coming to Syen Chuen next day, and you and your party—150 men in all—went to the railway station, armed with revolvers, with the intention of shooting the Governor.—Such an idea never entered my head. November 24th (old calendar) fell on a Sunday, and the next day was Christmas Day, which we celebrated in the usual way. Next day (the 26th) I was told by a man from Seoul that Yi Seung-hun was in Pyong-yang with two businessmen from the capital, and they were staying in a hotel kept by a Japanese. I was asked by this man from Seoul to go to the hotel and see these two businessmen and explain to them the promising prospects of the porcelain industry in this particular locality. I went to the hotel, and found that the so-called businessmen were the son and a nephew of the former Korean Minister of Education. Therefore I had no time to go to Syen Chuen, even had I wanted to.

#### MR. McCUNE'S ALLEGED INSTRUCTIONS.

You all assembled at the mission school at Syen Chuen, and went to the railway station, but as the Governor-General did not leave the car, you had to return without effecting your object. In the evening you all met again at the school, and you told the others that the Governor-General would be sure to leave his car next day, so that the party should not fail to attack him. McCune then told the party that they should fire at the Japanese with whom he would shake hands. So on the 28th you all went once more to the station, did you not?—I did not go to Syen Chuen that day, and I know nothing about the alleged proceedings. As for Mr. McCune, I met him once, but a long time ago.

A party of 150 of you went to the railway station and stood in double lines extending from the New Wiju to the Pyong-yang side. The Governor-General alighted from his car, and after greeting those who had assembled to receive him, returned to his car and the train moved

away. You failed in your attempt on the life of Count Terauchi partly because he was not known to your party by sight, and partly because of the strict guard that was kept of him.—I do not know the face of the General. But if the Court thinks that I met Mr. McCune in connection with this affair, I request that the Court call him as a witness.

Upon coming back from the station once more you again addressed the men in your party, and said that this failure could not be helped. Another chance would, however, be looked for, and their object eventually accomplished after much toil and labour.—I told the wife of An Myung-keun, when she called on me on November 17th, that she should persuade her husband to give up his idea of attacking high officials.

There are a large number of men from Syen Chuen who declare that they heard you give the address just mentioned.—I admit I have delivered many speeches, but they were all dealing with science. I have never dared to touch on political affairs in my speeches. If it can be proved that I did, I am ready to be killed.

#### 'JIRIKISHA-MAN'S EVIDENCE.

Do you know one of Im Chichong's servants named Yi?—I know a man of that name who pulls a jinrikisha.

He says that since August 1910 you frequently went to his master's house and had secret conferences with Baron Yun, Yang Ki-tak, Yi Seung-hun, and An Tai-kuk. In October alone you went there four times. Is that so?—I cannot understand with what object this man has given false evidence against me. I was then at Yangben and An-ak.

Did you not meet at the house every day during August, September, and October?—No; it is impossible.

Do you know Kang, who was formerly in the office of the *Tai Han Mai-i Shin-po*?—Yes, I know him; he was an accountant.

He also says that you came up from Pyong-yang to Seoul and met at Im's house. I cannot see why he said this against me, and I regret to see that the Court accepts the evidence of a jinrikisha-man against me, and does not consider my statements in defence.

Baron Yun also took part in the conference which was held on the suggestion of Yang Ki-tak. Several persons other than the jinrikisha coolie have given evidence to the same effect.

In reply to this the accused made a long statement which was interrupted by the Court interpreter, but accused went on with his reply, the Judges and even some of the accused smiling as he continued to address the Court. The final upshot of all this was that the interpreter summarised accused's lengthy statement by saying that he complained that when Baron Yun was examined, he understood that everyone else had been questioned, and so simply said "yes" to every question put to him. In order to get through the examination as quickly as possible. But even so, Baron Yun had never said that he had met accused in a conference held in Im's house in Seoul.

By the Court: You were examined side by side with Kil Chin-hyong who admitted that he went to Syen Chuen with you to kill the Governor-General.—Kil did not admit this at first. He only said "yes" when he became thoroughly scared by the threatening glare of the Procurator.

#### PROTEST AGAINST EXAMINATION ON ALLEGED FALSE STATEMENTS.

Yang Chom-milung also said that Kil went to Syen Chuen from Pyong-yang. And even supposing that you were at Yangben at the time, as you claim you were, you must have gone to Syen Chuen from there.—Yang has said that he simply answered the questions put to him by saying "yes" in every case. If he really made a false statement against me, I cannot understand his object. It is to be regretted that I am examined here in open Court on the strength of false statements made by other men. It was because I feared that this would be the case that I tried to commit suicide rather than be tried in such a way.

Your associates have not mentioned your name in this open Court, but they did at the police headquarters and in the Procurator's Court. You are a well-known figure among your followers, and need not be offended at the statements of men about you which have been quoted.—At the police headquarters I had to admit what I did not mean by saying "yes" to everything, but now in this open Court I say nothing but what my conscience prompts me to. Statements which were made under torture cannot be taken as evidence.

The Presiding Judge: All right, all right.



## COUNSEL AND THE COURT INTERPRETER.

Accused went on to make a further statement, but the Court Interpreter did not take any notice of it. Thereupon Mr. Ogawa, one of the counsel for the defence, got up and asked the Court to order that everything said by the accused should be interpreted. The interpreter then informed the Court that accused had said that all the other accused must have made these false statements under torture.

By the Court: Did the Yangben school have a roll-call book?—I remember that we had one for pupils, but I don't know if there was one for teachers. I was a teacher there for two months, at a monthly salary of ¥25. Some of the teachers were rather unsteady, and used to stay away from school quite frequently. Eventually it was decided that any teacher who absented himself from school should have his salary stopped for so many days. On leaving the school I got ¥50, the full amount of my two months salary, which proves that I was never away from Yangben during that time.

Here we have a roll-call for teachers, according to which you attended school only for four days ending November 8th. There is nothing to show where you were on the other days of those two months.—I attended school regularly every day. We were very busy, and sometimes did not affix our seals to the attendance book.

It seems to us things were done in a very easy-going way in your school.—I appeal to the Court to examine as witnesses certain of the students and the foreigners who were connected with the school in order to prove that during those two months I was always at school.

The Court gave no indication of desiring to call the witnesses applied for, and called Yang Ki-tak up for examination.

The name of Yang Ki-tak will be familiar to most readers of the *Chronicle*. He appeared as a witness some years ago in the case in which Mr. Bethell, Editor and Proprietor of the *Korea Daily News*, was charged with "inciting to disorder" and was sentenced to three weeks' imprisonment by a British Judge. This was in the extra-territorial days, but since the time Yang Ki-tak appeared as a witness in a British Court, he has been haled up more than once in a Japanese Court for various alleged political offences. Last year he was sentenced to imprisonment under the Peace Preservation Law, and now he has been brought

from jail to answer a more serious charge—that of conspiring to assassinate the Governor-General. From the following report of his examination, however, it will be seen that no more incriminating evidence has been obtained against him than against the other 122 alleged conspirators. Yang faced the Court with dignified composure, and replied to the questions put to him respectfully but firmly. The following is a report of his examination:—

By the Court: Were you sentenced by the Seoul District Court in April last year to imprisonment with hard labour for violation of the Peace Preservation Law?—Yes.

What is your religion?—I am a Christian, and a member of the Presbyterian Church.

What education have you had?—I studied Chinese until I was 15, and then I studied foreign languages and the new learning, but I am not a graduate of any school.

Did you study in Nagasaki?—I did not study there, but I taught Korean.

Did you ever hold any office?—I held office in the Household of the former Emperor of Korea as interpreter to the Board of Masters of Ceremonies.

How long did you hold that office?—I held it for two years.

When did you lose your position?—Seven years ago. I left the day after the Five Article Treaty between Japan and Korea was signed.

Did you have a Japanese badge, and return it?—Yes.

When did you start working with the *Korea Daily News*?—When I gave up my official position. Mr. Bethell [the proprietor of the paper] came to Korea about this time.

Did you work for this paper until May, 1910?—Yes.

## THE "KOREA DAILY NEWS."

What did you do then?—I tried to publish a paper on the same lines as the *Tai Han Mai-il Shinpo*, but the scheme was not successful. I then joined the staff of the French-Korean Company.

Are you a member of the New People's Society?—I approve the principles of the Society, but am not a member of it. The Society was established in the United States about 10 years ago, and six years ago An Chang-ho asked me to help the Society. I said I could only do so by

referring to it in the paper, but he did not want this done.

It is said that you are Vice-President of the Society and a member of the Executive Committee.—That is inaccurate. I know nothing about it.

Do you know if Baron Yun is the President?—An Chang-ho told me that the President of the Society was in America. I afterwards learned that Baron Yun had joined the Society, but I never heard that he had become President.

Are An Tai-kuk and Ok Kwan-pin members of the Society?—I have never heard so.

When you were in the *Korea Daily News* office did Kim have charge of collecting the money?—Yes.

Did you send him to Pyong-yang in 1910?—Yes, I think I did.

Was that about the time the ex-Emperor of Korea went on a tour of inspection?—No.

At the time that tour was made, did you send Kim to the Pyong-yang branch of the New People's Society to tell the members that the object of the Society was to assassinate high officials, and that as Prince Ito would be in attendance on the ex-Emperor, he should be killed?—That story is a fabrication. The object of the Society was not assassination. But even if that were the object, a youngster like Kim would not have been entrusted with such an important mission as that alleged.

We have evidence from Yi and others of your comrades in Pyongan Province that when Kim went about collecting money he also talked about assassination, and that he did this by your orders.—I do not know the man Yi, who said this, but I do know that the Society was under the control of An Chang-ho, who was in Pyong-yang. He could give orders, but I could not. The *Korea Daily News* had nothing to do with the New People's Society.

#### DENIAL OF VIOLENT POLICY.

There are some men who say that you, Yang Ki-tak, are a member of this Society, and that you hold extreme views regarding the mission of this body. They say that you insisted upon the assassination of the Governor-General and the five Ministers of State of the former Korean Government.—There may have been men who have said so. The purpose of Yang Ki-tak and the spirit of Yang Ki-tak are

right and truth. How, then, could I think of such plans and give voice to such opinions?

What are the objects of the New People's Society?—I have already explained this at the Procurator's Office. The object of the Society was to overcome the old and decayed ideas of the ancient days of Korea, to lead the people into a new civilisation, and to help them develop into a nation of liberty.

These were the ostensible objects of the Society, but in reality you planned to establish a military school at Chientao, and to educate your children there to prepare for a war of independence when Japan should be engaged in war with Russia or America. Further, your Society planned to assassinate the Governor-General and other high officials in order to arouse the spirits of the people, and to attract the attention of other countries to the dissatisfaction of the Korean people with the present political régime. Assassination, therefore, is one of the important objects of your Society.—From what I said just now, the Court should have understood the objects of the Society. What is known as "purpose" is disclosed to the world by action. The day after the annexation of Korea I conceived the idea of establishing a military school, and here [pointing to the red convict's dress which he was wearing] is the result. Look at the clothes I have on! But this has nothing to do with the charge of conspiracy now brought against me.

Was it not the idea of the Society from the very first to establish this school?—If it had been, the idea would have been carried out from the first. No, the idea was quite a new one.

#### THE INTERPRETATION OF EVIDENCE.

What were your thoughts at the time of the annexation? Had you no idea of assassinating high officials?—I had a mind to kill them and to establish a military school in Chientao at the time. Then I took a trip to Chientao to inspect conditions there so that we might settle there. The annexation is an event which no Korean will ever stop grieving over, but there is no help for it now. It is only the fate which has been hanging over Korea for decades, and all that can be done now is to make plans for the future. This is what I told Im Chi-chong.

[Upon comparing the above report of Yang Ki-tak's reply, as interpreted into

Japanese by the Court interpreter, with a note taken of Yang's own reply in Korean, it is significant to find that the words "I had a mind to kill them etc.," given above, do not appear in the Korean note. Yang's reply, as translated direct from the Korean, reads as follows:—"I have had the same thoughts from the day of annexation until to-day. On that day, as I went about the city, I found many people weeping. During that night, as I was thinking, I realised that it would be useless to grieve over the new conditions, so I tried to make out a new plan. I met Im Chi-chong, and said to him:— 'It is natural for us to feel sad, but what profit will come from only feeling sad? The destruction of our home is not the matter of a morning or of a night, but it has been gradually coming about through several decades. Let us make plans and work, waiting for a future opportunity.' " It will be noted that the reply as taken down in Japanese from the interpreter by our reporter is substantially the same as the Korean version, with the important exception of the words:—"I had a mind to kill them etc." How it comes about that this admission appears in Yang's answer as interpreted to the Court, and is absent from a note taken in Korean of his reply, we are unable to explain. Those who have followed the report of the trial, however, will remember that complaint was made more than once about the interpretation.—Ed.]

Did you not say you wanted to start a war of independence, and to train the people in the military school you were to establish at Chientao?—I gave all the facts about this school last year, when I was tried and sentenced in the Seoul Court.

You need not answer if you do not want to.—Indeed, I shall answer all you ask me.

Then you did not say anything about the school and the war of independence?—I did not intend to declare a real war of independence. I thought we could settle in Chientao and educate our people properly, for by developing knowledge the day of independence will come of itself.

#### ASSASSINATION CONDEMNED.

It seems rather a far-fetched idea to emigrate to a place and start an independence war by means of education, which

would necessarily take a long time. Meanwhile, the Koreans would become subjected to Japan, and it would seem to others that they approved the annexation. It was to prevent this idea getting abroad that you planned to assassinate the high officials, did you not?—I believe the Korean people generally understand what my thoughts and opinions are about them and our country. Assassination is a small and useless act which is not at all advisable.

Did it not become the object of the New People's Society, after the annexation was effected, to kill the Governor-General and establish a military school at Chientao?—I confessed last year about the school, but I know nothing about the assassination scheme. The military school was a new idea. I shall give an illustration from the Bible, for I am a Christian. Just as the Old Testament became useless after the New Testament came into being, so our old plans became useless after the new plans were made.

#### THE NATIONAL DEBT REDEMPTION SCHEME.

But according to the evidence given by Baron Yun, you hold the most extreme views about the assassination of high officials.—I have met the Baron, and have talked to him in the presence of others, but if he said that about me he must have told a lie.

[The Korean note of Yang's answer reads:—"I met Yun Chi-ho in regard to the scheme for the redemption of the National Debt. I met him at a place which is neither secret nor was it his residence. It was a place where many people assemble—the Y.M.C.A. building. We spoke only on the subject of paying off the National Debt."]

About August 1910 you went to Im Chi-chong's house outside the West Gate of Seoul, and in a secret room you met An Tai-kuk, Ok Kwan-pin, Yi Seung-hun, Baron Yun, and Im Chi-chong to talk over your grievances about the annexation. You then said that if you men failed to publicly complain about the political change which had come about, it would be assumed that the Koreans were satisfied with the annexation, and you would thus lose the sympathy of foreign Powers. It was necessary for high officials to be assassinated as an indication of your protest, and as the Governor-General was shortly going on a tour through the country, the chance thus afforded of assassinating him should not be missed.—

I never consulted these men on such a matter. Yi Seung-hun and Ok Kwan-pin were then at Pyong-yang. I did meet Baron Yun, but not at Im's house, nor was it in connection with the alleged conspiracy.

[The Korean note of the proceedings is rather more graphic. In reply to the Court's question, Yang is reported to have said:—

What date was it?

In August.—But was there no date?

No date.—Since there was no such meeting and no discussion, there very probably was no date.

Yang then went on to explain that his conversation with Baron Yun was solely about the scheme for the redemption of the National Debt.]

#### BARON YUN AND YANG KI-TAK.

But Baron Yun has said that you yourself proposed that the Governor-General should be assassinated, and the Baron says he endorsed the scheme.—It is impossible. I have never proposed such a thing.

[The Korean note of Yang's reply reads:—"Some days ago Yun Chi-no (during his examination in open Court) said that he did not go to Im's house. If Baron Yun is not a foolish man, how could he agree with the alleged suggestion? Further, Yang Ki-tak never institutes plans, though sometimes he expresses his opinion for or against things which have been already decided."]

Do you know that another conference, held in the same place and attended by the same men, was held in October?—It is not true.

Was it early in November, then?—It was not.

But Baron Yun has said that he and you others discussed the proposed assassination in August, September, and November.—There is no truth in it.

Do you know a man named Yi, a servant employed by Im?—I know the 'rikishaman there.

This man says that during those months you, An Tai-kuk, Ok Kwang-pin, and Baron Yun met at the house and held secret conferences.—A servant may say so, but it would be probably difficult for this man to identify the Baron if I asked him now to do so.

[The Korean note reads:—"I wish he (the 'rikishaman) was a witness

If you call him now and ask him to identify us could you not find out the truth?" ]

Kang, who was formerly on the *Tai Han Mail Ship*, was also well known to the Baron. Was it not through Baron Yun's recommendation that Kang got into that office?—He was recommended by the accountant.

Kang has stated that he also met you others at Im's house, and introduced you to Baron Yun.—It is not a fact.

[According to the Korean report of Yang's reply, he said:—"I do not know whether he said that or not. At the meetings I attended we discussed the redemption of the National Debt, and not assassination. If Kang discussed assassination with us, why is he not present here in Court today with us?" ]

You deny all these facts, but as a result of the meetings at Im's house you decided to make an attempt on the life of the Governor-General at Pyong-yang, Chyong-ju, Syen Chuen, and other places. On August 20th, September 15th, and October 20th, 1910, your party went to these stations with the object of killing him, but the Governor-General did not arrive as expected. In November he did make a trip, but at some places he did not stop, at others he did not leave his car, and for one reason and another the plot was unsuccessful.—I cannot understand the present case. Nothing at all happened of this kind.

[Korean note of Yang's reply:—"I have heard all this several times during the trial, but I do not know how such reports have arisen. Though you say Yang Ki-tak, of Seoul, said all this, I know nothing at all about it, as I said just now." ]

In the course of your trial in the Seoul Court last year, you stated that you had a mind at one time to restore the Han Dynasty. Do you remember this?—I do not remember distinctly, but I remember saying that although the Han Dynasty was ruined, I could not forget it.

Going a step farther, you said that you wanted to see Korea an independent State.—If I said so it must appear on the Court records.

Yes, it does. Now, as a result of the idea, did not the project of assassination spring from the bottom of your heart?—I have never thought about it. Admitting that the Court record contains my state-

ment that I desired to see the Han Dynasty re-established, that is no reason why I should plan an attempt on the Governor-General. It is evident that the assassination of that official could never have brought the Han Dynasty back into power. Further, the Governor-General is not only one man; one Governor-General having fallen, another would at once take his place.

This concluded the examination of Yang Ki-tak, and left only two more prisoners to be examined. The first of these to be called was Im Chi-chong, at whose house in Seoul the chief "conspirators" are alleged to have met. He said that he was a Methodist, and had lived five years in America. During that time he joined the New People's Society, the object of which was to help Koreans living abroad. Upon returning to Korea he entered the office of the *Tai Han Mai-i Shinpo*, but had nothing to do with the editorial side of the business.

By the Court: Did you occupy a house owned by Baron Yun?—No. I occupied a house belonging to Kang.

What was the rent?—I had it free, because I had a claim of ¥300 against Kang. The house was just outside the West Gate.

What were the objects of the New People's Society when you entered the office of the *Tai Han Mai-i Shinpo*?—As I have already stated, I joined the Society about seven years ago when I was in America. The headquarters, I think, were in Hawaii, and the objects of the Society were not those which have been alleged.

Were you arrested when Count Yi Wan-yong was stabbed?—Yes.

Were you arrested because you had been given a dagger by Yi Chai-myong, and handed it to him when he attacked the Count?—No; but I was arrested on suspicion of being an accomplice.

Were not conferences held at your house by Baron Yun, Yang Ki-tak, An Tai-kuk, and others after the annexation had been declared?—No such conferences were ever held in my house. Yi Seung-hun, Yang Ki-tak, and others came to see me at times, but Baron Yun has never been to my house.

Did you not all agree to assassinate high officials, and send Yi Seung-hun and An Tai-kuk to carry out the plot, while Ok Kwan-pin was appointed to preach along the way on the objects of your

Society?—No; I know nothing about this. An and Yang often called on me, but not Baron Yun and Ok.

Did these men meet at your house in October and November 1910?—No.

But they did assemble there, and Yang proposed that the Governor-General should be killed, all those present supporting his suggestion. This is shown by the evidence of Baron Yun at the police headquarters and the Procurator's Office.—It is not so. As for Baron Yun's evidence, I should be obliged if the Court would read the record out to me. [Baron Yun, it will be remembered, withdrew his "confession" at the police headquarters on being examined in Court, and described how he had been trapped into "confessing."—Ed.]

But Kang, the owner of your house, said that you and the others met four or five times at your house.—Kang must have said that in "disagreeable circumstances" [i.e. under torture or threats.]

Your servant Yi has also stated that during the month of August these men met at your house three or four times to consult each other about the conspiracy. Is that true?—Yi is about 60 years of age, and it is impossible for an old man like him to accurately remember things about other people. If he did make such a statement, it might be due to the condition he found himself in [i.e. intimidation or torture.] I beg to request the Court to call him and allow me to question him.

The Court ignored the prisoner's request, and put one more question, asking accused whether he and others did not go to various places along the railway on certain dates with the object of killing the Governor-General. The accused replied to the effect that he had never taken part in any conferences regarding the alleged conspiracy, nor did he know anything at all about any such scheme. This concluded his examination, and there remained but one more prisoner to be examined.

The last of the 123 men to be examined by the Court in connection with the charge of conspiracy was Lyn Tongsol, a really handsome man who, dressed in spotless white Korean robes, made quite a distinguished figure as he faced the Court for examination. Lyn was formerly an officer in the Korean Army, and he replied to the questions put to him in the sharp but respectful manner

of a military man. He spoke Japanese well, so the services of the Court interpreter were dispensed with.

#### EARLY DAYS IN JAPANESE ARMY.

In reply to questions by the Court, accused said he held the Fifth Grade of the Order of the Rising Sun. He also had a war medal, having been attached to the Japanese Army during the Russo-Japanese War. He had no Korean decorations. He said he graduated from the Seijo Military Academy in Tokyo in 1902, and served in the Army until the following year, when he entered the Military Cadet School. In 1904, when the war broke out, he went to Manchuria with his regiment, and afterwards returned to Korea, when he entered the Korean Army as Ensign. He was promoted to the rank of Major, and held that rank when the Army was disbanded about four years ago as the result of various political changes. Since leaving the army he had not engaged in any sort of business, and was not closely acquainted with Baron Yun, whom he first met soon after his return to Korea from Manchuria. Accused said he met Yang Kitak about the same time, and Im Chichong he had known for about four years. Accused said he had been told by An Changho about the New People's Society. He had said that the object of the Society was to encourage the Korean people to adapt themselves to the new order of things, and to encourage industry and commerce. So far as he (accused) knew, there had been no change in the objects of the Society.

By the Court: Do you not know that the object of the New People's Society was to establish a military school at Chientao, and to start a war of independence by taking advantage of the opportunity afforded if Japan were involved in war with Russia or America?—I do not know anything of the kind.

This being a roundabout and slow-moving scheme, which would take a long time to realise, your party resolved to take more prompt and decisive action by assassinating the Governor-General and other high officials in order to demonstrate to the world that the Koreans had not submitted themselves to the Japanese.—I never heard anything about it.

#### MOVEMENTS IN NORTH KOREA.

Did you go to Chientao about March or April 1910, and stay there until about August?—Yes.

Did you then go to Vladivostok and return in October?—Yes.

What was your object in going to Chientao?—I was in Peking on business early in 1910, and An Chang-ho came to me with some friends and urged me to go to Chientao. I agreed, and went; that is all.

Did you arrange to publish a newspaper there?—Yes. I had an idea of publishing a magazine, but it was not carried out.

Did you not intend to propagate the policy of the New People's Society through that magazine?—No, it is not so.

Prior to this, about the end of 1908 or the beginning of 1909, did you not plan the assassination of Prince Ito during his tour of inspection through the country with the ex-Emperor of Korea?—I have heard about this scheme on several occasions, but it is a sheer fabrication. I made a trip to Pyong-yang, New Wiju, and Wiju about this time, but my journey had nothing to do with any such plan, nor did I ever think of doing such a thing.

Did you make a trip to the north from Seoul in October 1910?—Yes. I left Seoul about the beginning of October for Pyong-yang, where I stayed for two or three nights. I then went to Chinampo, staying there two days, and then went to Pyong-yang, where I stayed for two or three days. I also went to Wiju, where I stayed one day, to New Wiju, where I stayed over one night, and to Charyongkwon, where I stayed for one night with O Heni-won, one of the men now accused in this case. The following day I went by train to Syen Chuen, and then went up to Pyongyang, where I stayed two days.

Did you go to Chyongju at this time?—No, although I went there when Prince Ito was making his tour of inspection through the country. I have not since been there.

You stayed in the house of Yun Syong-un at Pyong-yang, and having assembled the members of the New People's Society at the Taikuk book-store, you addressed them to the effect that although their attempt on the life of the Governor-General had been unsuccessful, the plot should be carried out without fail at New Wiju.—No, that is not so.

You also consulted Baron Yun on the matter, and agreed to organise a "dare-to-die" party to carry out the proposed

assassination.—No, such a thing has never happened.

But there are some people who have admitted having heard your addresses at the book-store and at the Taisong School.—It is impossible.

You then went up to Wiju and then to Pyong-yang, where you delivered further addresses.—No.

Did you put up at the house of Hong Song-in at Chyongju?—No, I did not go there, and the man is a stranger to me.

But men from Chyongju have given evidence that you went there and addressed them.—It is not true; I did not go there.

Paik Mong-kiu is one of those who said so.—I know nothing about it.

Did you go to Chyongju?—No.

You also went to New Wiju and talked over the conspiracy with Yi Keui-tang, did you not?—No, I did not.

Did you meet him outside the south gate of Wiju and tell him to kill the Governor-General at New Wiju?—No.

You also sent your wife's brother to Kwaksan with instructions to tell the members of the Society there that you were at Syen Chuen preparing to carry out the plot, but you wished them also to make preparations so that they too could repeat the attempt if necessary. Is this true?—I never made any such statement.

You also met the local members of the Society at Yi Seung-hun's house at Syen Chuen, and addressed them.—It is not true. I only went to that place once, and that was as a scout during the Russo Japanese war.

#### THE ALLEGED MEETING AT THE MISSION SCHOOL.

You also met the members at Yi Seung-hun's office in Syen Chuen, and again at the mission school there, where—in the presence of McCune, the principal of the school—you addressed those present on the subject of the conspiracy.—I did not do so. I remember, too, that Yi, when questioned about this incident in Court the other day, said he knew nothing about it.

You then went back to Pyong yang, and continued to address the members of the Society about the conspiracy, but warning them that if anyone should ask any questions about your movements, they were to say that you were going round trying to get people to take up shares in a porcelain factory which you were about

to establish. Is that so?—No. I did not tell anyone to do any such thing. It is quite true, however, that I did go through this district trying to interest people to take shares in a company which I proposed to establish.

You do not admit these facts, but we have evidence which shows that you went round North Korea in November 1910 speaking to the people and urging them to assassinate the Governor-General. On October 31st and November 2nd you went to New Wiju from Pyong yang, and addressed the local members of the Society, telling them to proceed to the railway station and assassinate the Governor-General when he passed through on his way to attend the ceremony held in celebration of the opening of the Yalu bridge. The men went to the station, armed with revolvers, but could not carry out their plans owing to the strict way in which this Excellency was guarded.—This has absolutely no connection with me.

You held that the plot should be carried out with the utmost care and energy. A Korean barrister first went to the place, and then you and your party went to the railway station on October 31st, and November 1st and 2nd. Altogether you went six times to the station with the intention of killing the Governor-General, but each time you found he was too closely guarded.—Nothing of this kind has ever happened so far as I am concerned; moreover, I am not acquainted with anybody in Wiju or New Wiju.

Did you call upon Yi Seung-hun in June 1911?—No.

You deny all these questions, yet members of your party from Syen Chuen, Pyong-yang, Chyongin, Kwaksan, and New Wiju have admitted that you went round to all these places and told them that although previous attempts on the Governor-General had been unsuccessful, the next attempt must be successful.—It does not matter to me what any persons have said. They have said, so I have just been told by the Court, that I met men at the Taikuk book store to talk over the conspiracy. That statement is nothing but a sheer lie. For one thing, the book store is in a wide and busy street, and is frequented by a very large number of people. How then could it be possible to discuss there such a scheme as the killing of a man?

There is another room upstairs.—It is quite evident that the men referred to

have told lies against me. The story does not stand to reason at all.

Did you go to Syen Chuen and Chyong ju in connection with this conspiracy?—No.

#### PRO-JAPANESE ACTIVITY.

Several men here [indicated by the Court] have said that they saw you.—They are all strangers to me. I am also accused of having gone into these districts to advocate an attack upon Prince Ito. I did go to these places, yes, but certainly not with that object in view. At that time the Resident-General was very unpopular among the people of Pyongan province, and I did everything in my power to smooth things over and improve conditions generally. I did this all out of my own pocket. I went round to the various commercial firms and to the schools at places along the railway, and urged people to do certain things when the Resident-General came along. I persuaded the people to turn out and go to the railway station to welcome him as he passed through. There was some dispute as to whether Korean people should hang out the Rising Sun flag or not, and eventually the Japanese flag was displayed, which made me think that I had accomplished what I had set out to do in bringing about better relations. But alas! all these deeds have now paid me very badly, and in a wholly unexpected way. I never thought that for this I should be charged with conspiracy.

You may have been involved in the plot. There is no help for it if you look at things in that way. The evidence given against me by Yi Keni-tang was quite false, as I hope to prove later on by evidence. I was also alleged to have conferred with certain parties at Wiju who were interested in the conspiracy, but this is also wrong, and Kim who gave this evidence against me, was then in Seoul.

Many other men from the various districts have also given evidence to the same effect.—Yes, but they also said in Court that they did not know me personally, and that they had said what they did against me because they had been "forced by circumstances." I believe that no matter what has been said against me by others, that which is not true must sooner or later be found out, and an innocent man will be released from the charge made against him.

Since you went to Chientao with An Chang-ho, you must have had some special object, and cannot be regarded as an innocent man.—You cannot judge my innocence or guilt from the fact that I was once with this man. It would be a very strange thing if you did.

Are you an admirer of An Chung-keun (the assassin of Prince Ito)?—No.

Did you approve of his act?—No, I am quite opposed to such acts.

What is this? (a framed photograph of An.)—That is a picture of An. The fact that that picture was found in my house does not necessarily indicate that I am an admirer of the man. There is no inference to be drawn from that picture being in my house; I think I explained the whole thing to the police authorities. I believe my children put the picture in a frame.

But you decorated your room with this picture.—That depends on the way you look at the matter. If you hold that I was an admirer of An because I had his picture on the wall, you might just as well conclude that the photographer also admired An because he took his picture.

#### QUESTIONS BY COUNSEL.

The Court having concluded its examination of accused, Mr. Okubo, counsel for the defence, asked permission to put some questions to accused. The Court acquiescing, counsel asked accused if he had had an interview with Count Terauchi, the Governor-General, in regard to the porcelain company which he was en- the advocates of the two schemes.

#### INTERVIEWS WITH THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

In reply, accused said that he met the Governor-General in the spring of last year, and had frequently met his Excellency before he returned to Japan. Accused said the Governor-General told him not to mix himself up with political affairs, but to start an industrial concern. It was as a result of these various meetings with the Governor-General, continued accused, that he started to organise the porcelain company. Later on he was arrested and detained in custody for several days on suspicion of being connected with a certain affair, and when he next met the Governor-General his Excellency told him not to be disappointed at the hitch which had occurred, but to push on with his scheme for establishing the company. Upon the Governor-General returning to Korea from Japan,



accused again had an interview with him, and on explaining his plans, the Governor-General warmly endorsed them.

Mr. Okubo: Did you go to Pyongan province with the idea of getting men to stand as promoters of this company, after you had consulted the Director of the Agricultural, Commercial, and Industrial Bureau of the Government-General?—Yes.

There being no further questions, the Court rose, and the long task of examining the accused came to an end.

## THE ELEVENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### THE APPLICATIONS FOR WITNESSES. SPEECHES BY COUNSEL.

#### PROCURATOR AND FOREIGN MISSIONARIES.

SEOUL, July 12.

The examination of the 123 men accused of conspiracy having been concluded, the Court yesterday morning reviewed the evidence, and in the afternoon listened to the addresses of counsel for the defence. The proceedings in the morning were somewhat dull and uninteresting. When the Court sat at about 10.10 the presiding Judge announced that the official records prepared in the Procurator's Office of the statements made by accused would be read in Korean. The record of Baron Yun's evidence was first read by a Court interpreter, the reading occupying nearly twenty minutes.

On the conclusion of this statement Mr. Ogawa, one of the leading counsel for the accused, pointed out to the Court that the reading of these records in Korean was of no value to most of the barristers appearing for the accused, as they were not acquainted with the Korean language.

The presiding Judge, in reply to counsel's remarks, said that only the records of the most prominent men among the accused would be read. In regard to the language, the Judge said that the records were read in Korean because most of the accused were unacquainted with Japanese, and it was for their benefit that the records were being read.

Records of the statements made by Chang Eung-chin, Yi Myong-yong, Kim Si-cham, Yi Pong-cho, and La Senng-hut were then read, this occupying about two hours. The more important parts of the

evidence given by Yi Yong-wha, Chong Won-pun, and Paik Yong-hui were read in both languages.

Next the documentary evidence prepared from other sources was gone over, and the revolvers and cartridges, a long sword, a sword-stick, two or three pocket electric lamps, note-books, and books of songs—these last containing the "dangerous thoughts" and "inflammatory phrases" already quoted—were again produced and re-identified. It was now past one o'clock, and the presiding Judge announced that the proceedings would be adjourned till the afternoon, when any counter-evidence and counsel's statements on behalf of the accused would be dealt with.

#### STATEMENT BY BARON YUN.

When the Court re-assembled at 2.30 p.m. Mr. Miyake, one of the counsel for the defence, informed the Court that Baron Yun wished to make a statement, and asked permission for him to do so.

The Court giving the desired permission, Baron Yun came forward to address the Court in his defence. Speaking in Japanese, Baron Yun said that when he was first examined in February last at the police headquarters and questioned as to whether he met certain other men at Im Chi-chong's house outside the West Gate, Seoul, he denied the allegation. For ten days he persisted in this denial, and then the police official who was conducting the examination told him that Ok Kwan-pin, An Tai-kuk, Yang Ki-tak, and Im Chi-chong had each admitted that they had met him (the Baron) and discussed the conspiracy with him. The police officer said that he would not allow him to regain his liberty merely because he denied having met these men for the purpose stated, and declared that he would be made to confess by all and any means.

Turning round and pointing to Yang Ki-tak and the other men, who were sitting to the Court to allow him to inter-declared that they were the men who had dragged him into the present affair. At the police station, when he heard they had told the police that they had met him at Im Chi-chong's house in connection with the conspiracy, he demanded to be confronted with these four men in order that he might question them directly on the point, but the police would not permit this. Baron Yun concluded by appealing to the Court to allow him to inter-

rogate these four men in order to show that their statements were untrue.

Mr. Ogawa asked the Procurator whether the indictment against Baron Yun included a charge of conspiracy against the Governor-General on the occasion of his Excellency's visit to the Yalu in October last year.

Chief Procurator Matsuhara replied in the negative.

Mr. Ogawa then referred to various inaccuracies in the evidence given against certain of the accused by two men who had already been arrested in connection with the conspiracy.

Mr. Miyake, another barrister for the defence, produced a small note book, the property of Baron Yun and found in his house. Counsel pointed out certain entries in this book which, he said, would prove that Baron Yun was not in Seoul but in Kaisong on the days on which it was alleged he met the other men at Im Chi-chong's house at Seoul.

#### EXHIBITS FOR THE DEFENCE.

Mr. Ogawa also put in as exhibits a number of orders for payments signed and issued by the Baron in his capacity as principal of a school at Kaisong. Counsel further put in several cheques signed by the Baron, the diary of a church which he had attended, and other documents to prove that on the three days in question—September 10th, November 16th, and early in December 1910—Baron Yun was not in Seoul but in Kaisong. Counsel added that by this evidence he sought to prove not only that the Baron was not at the conferences about the conspiracy which were alleged to have been held, but he also wished to show that the Baron's "confession" could not be accepted as evidence in its entirety.

On behalf of Lyu Tong-sol, the ex-Major in the Korean Army, Mr. Okubo put in as exhibits a list of the promoters of and shareholders in the Korean Industrial Company, a concern which accused was trying to float, and a number of telegrams. Counsel pointed out that among the promoters and shareholders in the Company were the names of men in Seoul, Pyong-yang, Wiju, and Chinnampo, and this fact went to confirm accused's statement in the course of his examination that he made a trip through the country in order to get people interested in this new concern. This trip counsel reminded the Court, was made

with the knowledge and approval of the authorities, and it was therefore perfectly clear that the journey he took through the provinces had nothing whatever to do with the alleged conspiracy against the Governor-General.

In regard to the telegrams submitted as exhibits, counsel said that according to the prosecution, accused went to Syen Chuen from Chyongju on November 27th, 1910, with a party of twenty men, all armed with revolvers, who went to the railway station ostensibly to "welcome" the Governor-General, but actually with the object of killing him. Counsel said he had telegraphed to the station-master at Chyongju inquiring the number of passengers carried by rail that day between Chyongju and Syen Chuen. The station-master had replied by telegram stating that only one passenger travelled that day by train between these two stations, which clearly proved that the allegation that accused had gone from Chyongju to Syen Chuen with a party of twenty men was absolutely unfounded.

Mr. Miyake submitted as exhibits a diary, an attendance-book from the Yang-sil school, Pyong-yang, where Kil Chin-hyong was a pupil-teacher, to prove that he could not possibly have gone to Wiju and Syen Chuen as alleged.

Mr. Hoshida put in exhibits in favour of Pin Liushuh, including a certificate signed by the Rev. Mr. Baird as principal of a Pyong-yang school.

#### THE APPLICATION FOR WITNESSES.

Sundry other exhibits of a similar nature having been put in by Japanese and Korean barristers, Mr. Ogawa rose to make an application, on behalf of all the counsel, for the examination of witnesses for the defence.

#### THE POSITION OF MR. McCUNE.

Mr. Ogawa first applied to the Court to call Mr. McCune, Inspector Kunitomo, and Mr. Watanabe, a police interpreter, and examine them with a view to throwing more light upon the circumstances in which it was alleged this conspiracy had been planned. From what had been heard in Court during the hearing of this case, it would seem that Mr. McCune was very intimately connected with the case, yet strange to say he had not once been called upon to give evidence. The whole proceedings were based mainly upon what the Court de-

scribed and regarded as the "confessions" of the accused men, but in his (counsel's) opinion this foundation of the case was insufficient, especially when he came to consider that a man who was most closely connected with the conspiracy—judging from the Court record of the "facts" of the case—had not been tried with the others for his share in the plot. Personally, counsel doubted very much if Mr. McCune was connected in any way with the alleged conspiracy, but supposing, for the sake of argument, that this unfortunately was not the case, it must then be assumed that Mr. McCune was one of the chief figures—a ringleader—of the whole conspiracy. This extraordinary position would naturally be assumed from the contents of the documents in the hands of the Court, but he (counsel) urged that this case must not be decided solely on the documentary evidence submitted to the Court by the Procurators, and he therefore applied that the witnesses mentioned should be called, and their testimony obtained as to the real facts of the case. The Court might, perhaps, assume that if Mr. McCune were summoned to give evidence, he would not speak the truth about this affair because he himself was implicated, but that would be an unworthy suspicion. Counsel concluded by asking that in addition to the foreign witness applied for, Mr. Moffett be also summoned to give evidence.

#### THE ALLEGATIONS OF TORTURE.

In regard to his application for the calling of two Japanese officials as witnesses, Mr. Ogawa said that they were both directly concerned with the examination of the accused men at the police headquarters, the official record of which examination was the essential part of the evidence in the present case. This record purported to contain the "confessions" of the accused men, and on the authenticity of those "confessions" the decision of this case to a very great extent depended. The majority of the accused men, on being examined in open Court and faced with their own "confessions," had declared that these statements had been forced from them. They asserted that they were compelled to answer in the affirmative all the questions put to them by the police. In the event of refusal, they declared they were ill-treated—suspended in the air from cords, or beaten—until unable to further

endure the pain of torture. As a barrister, continued Mr. Ogawa, he could not allow these serious allegations to pass without investigation, and it was for this reason that he asked the Court to call as witnesses the officials he had mentioned, in order that the real facts of the case might be ascertained. The very serious allegations of torture—the "teasing" and the hanging-up by cords—should be thoroughly investigated, and the whole matter gone into very carefully, lest the real truth never became known. He regarded the inquiry into the allegations of torture as a very important matter, first because the accused in open Court had retracted their former "confessions," and second because the good reputation of the police authorities was at stake. For these two reasons he considered it most important to thoroughly investigate the charges made—first, to establish the genuineness or otherwise of the "confessions," and second to ascertain the authenticity or otherwise of the charges against the police.

Speaking then in his capacity as counsel for Baron Yun, Mr. Ogawa applied to the Court to call one of the Baron's servants and a servant of Im Chi-chong, to prove that the Baron did not meet Yang Ki-tak and the other three men at Im Chi-chong's house at Seoul. Counsel also asked that Yi Chong-soon and another man, who were alleged to have acted as Baron Yun's messengers to carry news from him to the alleged conspirators, be called as witnesses. A further application was made to call the Rev. G. H. Winn, an American citizen, as a witness. All these witnesses, declared counsel, would be able to testify that Baron Yun was not in Seoul but in Kaisong on the days on which he was alleged to have met the others to discuss the conspiracy.

Mr. Takabashi applied to the Court to summon a Korean police inspector attached to headquarters and one other Korean officer, Mr. An, a Korean barrister, and Messrs. Moffett and Harris as witnesses. Counsel also asked that the Court should proceed to Pyong-yang and inspect the premises of the Taikuk book store, where the conspirators were alleged to have frequently met to discuss their plans. Counsel asked that the Court inspect these premises in order to see whether it was possible for a large number of men to meet there, as was alleged. Counsel further asked that Mr.

Watase, a Japanese pastor (formerly of Kobe), be called to give evidence in favour of Chang Eung-chin. Mr. Watase could prove that Chang was not a man to set himself against the Japanese authorities in any way. It was Chang's object to bring the Koreans in Pyongyang district to adapt themselves to the new régime, and it was in this connection that he had been introduced by Mr. Watase to an official connected with the Government General. Counsel added that Chang had even played for a subsidy from the Government for the Taesong school, where he was engaged as a teacher.

Mr. Okubo, on behalf of Lyu Tong-sol, applied for the examination of three witnesses to prove that Lyu did not go to Chyongju or Syen Chuen railway stations to "receive" the Governor-General. On behalf of Yi Seung-hun, counsel applied for two witnesses—Yi Tai-syong and Yi Wonyong, the son and nephew respectively of Mr. Yi Chaikou, formerly Korean Minister of Education. Counsel also applied for copies of the telegrams sent from the Pyongyang post-office to Mr. Yi Chaikou in Seoul, announcing their arrival at the former place. These telegrams would prove Yi Seung-hun's statement that he was with these two young men on his way to his porcelain works, and could not have been at Syen Chuen railway station, as alleged. Counsel remarked that although the Court records stated that some of the accused had asserted Yi was at the station, and Yi himself was also on record as having "confessed" to being there, these telegrams, if produced, would establish the facts and discredit the so-called "confession." Counsel further asked that two Koreans who had given evidence against Yi, but who had not been proceeded against in this case, be summoned as witnesses.

Mr. Tak, a Korean barrister, who spoke Japanese fluently, applied to the Court to examine the police who were on duty at Pyongyang and Syen Chuen railway stations on the days upon which the unsuccessful attacks upon the Governor-General were alleged to have been made. Counsel remarked that the days in question were very soon after the annexation, and the authorities would naturally be very much on the alert for any untoward incident. It was easy to understand the additional precautions which would be taken by the police at a railway station to which the Governor-General was

known to be coming. In these circumstances it was absolutely impossible that a large number of men, all armed with dangerous weapons, would have been allowed to stand on the platform.

A number of applications for witnesses were then made on behalf of various of the accused by Japanese and Korean barristers. Among the names mentioned were those of Messrs. McCune, Holdcroft, Moffett, Sharrocks, and Whittemore, and a French priest residing in Seoul.

Those of the accused who were not defended by counsel were then allowed to make applications to the Court in their own defence. An Tai-kuk asked that certain documents be obtained from the Taikouk book-store, Pyongyang, and also wished an American missionary called to give evidence on his behalf. Ok Kwam-pin asked that Messrs. McCune, Sharrocks, Roberts, Wells, and Graham Lee be called, while Yang Ki-tak asked for one witness to be called.

#### SPEECH BY PUBLIC PROCURATOR.—THE CONNECTION OF FOREIGNERS WITH THE CASE.

Procurator Sakai opposed the applications made by counsel and by accused in person, and argued that it was unnecessary for the Court to grant the applications. The accused had declared in open Court that the statements made by them at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office were forced from them by torture. Judging from the manner in which they had made their statements in Court, they did not appear to him to be the sort of men who would "confess" anything under torture. From the very nature of this case the facts could not have been obtained by torture. It was at first believed by the judicial authorities that the crime committed by these men was merely one of robbery with violence [referring to the alleged extortion of money from wealthy people to swell the funds of the alleged conspirators], but after some fifty of the accused had been examined some new and very suspicious facts came to light, and it was also seen that certain foreigners were connected with the affair. In these circumstances it was unnecessary now to call either any foreigners or police officials as witnesses, for these points were already plain, as could be seen from the official records of the preliminary examination in the possession of the Court. There was no better way of ascertaining the real facts of the

case than that which had already been followed out.

In regard to the application which had been made to call the police who were on guard at the railway stations, the Procurator said that while it was true more or less of a guard was kept on the occasions of the Governor-General's visits, it must be remembered that the accused represented the leading men of their districts, and it was naturally impracticable to examine and search them one by one as they were admitted to the platforms. It was an established fact that some of the accused who could not otherwise gain admittance to the platforms disguised themselves as students, and went on the platform with the students.

As for the application that the Court should proceed to Pyong-yang to inspect the size of the premises of the Taikeuk book-store, the Procurator said this was quite unnecessary. The place was strongly guarded by the accused themselves when they met there. The number of men now charged with complicity in the plot was 123, but there were really about 306 concerned, while the membership of the New People's Society was about 100,000. In short, the Procurator recommended the Court to reject the whole of the applications made by counsel for the defence and by the accused themselves.

#### REPLY BY COUNSEL FOR DEFENCE.

Mr. Okubo, rising to reply to the Procurator, submitted that if the Court, which was regarded as impartial, allowed itself to be persuaded by the Procurator's address to reject the whole of the applications which had been made for witnesses for the defence, it would be a matter for deep regret. The present case had attracted public attention all over the world, and even if there were but one innocent man among the 123 now charged who was wrongfully sentenced, it would be a very serious matter. Counsel concluded by expressing the sincere hope that the Court would very carefully consider its decision with regard to the applications which had been made on behalf of the accused, for witnesses to be called.

The presiding Judge announced that the Court's decision in regard to the applications would be given on July 13th, and at seven o'clock the day's proceedings came to a close.

## THE TWELFTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### COURT'S REJECTION OF APPLICATION FOR WITNESSES.

#### COUNSELS' PROTEST.

SEOUL, July 15.

The Court was crowded to-day with people anxious to hear the decision in regard to the applications made by counsel and the accused for witnesses to be called for the defence. Decision on this point was to have been given on the 13th, but was postponed until to-day.

The proceedings were very brief. The presiding Judge announced that the Court had considered the applications made, and had granted Mr. Okubo's request for the production of the original of the telegram sent from Pyong-yang by the son and nephew of Mr. Yi Chai-kon, former Minister of Education, to Mr. Yi in Seoul, reporting their arrival at Pyong-yang. The telegram, it will be remembered, was applied for by counsel to prove that his client, Yi Seung-hun, was with these two young men at Pyong-yang at the time he was alleged to be with the "conspirators." The Court further announced that An Tai-kuk's application for the production of the original of a telegram sent by him to Yi Seung-hun at Pyong-yang dealing with business matters was also granted. Decision on all the other applications was reserved, but the Court announced its intention of calling a clerk in the Railway Bureau of the Government-General to give evidence as to the number of passengers travelling by rail between Chyongju and Syen Chuen between November 25th and 30th, 1910.

The proceedings were then adjourned until the 17th instant.

## THE THIRTEENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### EVIDENCE BY AN OFFICIAL.

SEOUL, July 17.

The proceedings in Court to-day lasted only about two hours, including a rather long recess, but were none the less extremely interesting, and even dramatic. The evidence regarding the number of passengers carried by train on the days on which large parties of "conspirators"

are alleged to have gone to Syen Chuen was particularly interesting. There was again a large number of spectators, including about a dozen foreigners, of whom four were ladies.

The witness called by the Court to give evidence regarding the number of passengers carried between Syen Chuen and Chyongju gave some rather important evidence. Mr. Kawai Jisaburo, the witness in question, is employed in the accountant's department of the Government-General Railway Bureau, and wore a neat military-looking uniform, with a short sword. After answering the usual preliminaries, witness said he was engaged in compiling statistics relating to the railway service, and could give any information required concerning the number of passengers carried on the line. The Court asked a number of questions regarding passengers carried, which were fully answered by witness. It may be easier to follow the replies by tabulating the figures given by this witness:—

*Passengers from Chyongju to Syen Chuen, 1910.*

December	26	1
"	27	9
"	28	9
"	29	4
"	30	9
"	31	7

*Passengers from Kwaksan to Syen Chuen.*

December	26	7
"	27	6
"	28	6
"	29	9
"	30	0
"	31	3

*Passengers from Syen Chuen to Chyongju.*

December	26	4
"	27	7
"	28	1
"	29	5
"	30	4
"	31	14

*Passengers from Syen Chuen to Kwaksan.*

December	26	26
"	27	6
"	28	5
"	29	7
"	30	2
"	31	2

The Court asked witness from what sources this information was obtained. The witness replied that the figures were taken from the daily reports of passengers and fares made up by the station-masters at the respective places. Witness

then handed these documents to the Court for perusal, the presiding Judge announcing that the papers would be retained for the time being. The Judge also remarked that the documentary evidence which had been collected by the Procurators was practically identical with that just handed in by witness.

Mr. Okubo informed the Court that the telegram he had received from the station-master at Chyongju, stating that only one passenger had travelled down to Syen Chuen on November (December) 27th was incorrect. According to the police, who had made inquiries, the station-master had made a mistake in the date.

The Court announced that information had been received from the Telegraphic Bureau of the Government-General, stating that all the originals of telegrams received prior to December 28th, 1910, had been destroyed.

Mr. Okubo said he had in his possession the original of the telegram sent by An Tai-kuk (on behalf of Yi Seung-hun) to Yun Syong-un, the proprietor of a hotel at Pyong-yang, asking that accommodation be reserved for three persons (Yi and the two young men with whom he was travelling), that three 'rikisha be sent to the railway station, and that half-a-dozen people be sent to meet the visitors. This telegram, continued counsel, was sent from the post office at the West Gate, Seoul, on December 25th, 1910, and from this fact it was quite evident that Yi Seung-hun had nothing whatever to do with the alleged conspiracy at Syen Chuen.

On being shown this telegram, Yun Syong-un, the hotel-keeper, identified it as being the message sent to him by Yi Seung-hun from Seoul, though he could not say whether Yi had actually written it himself.

An Tai-kuk testified that the telegram in question had been written by him on behalf of Yi Seung-hun, who was then going to Pyong-yang with the son and the nephew of the former Korean Minister of Education.

Mr. Okubo then produced, as an exhibit, a journal kept by Yun Syong-un in which were certain entries showing that payments of money had been made for hotel expenses for Yi Seung-hun and the two young men who accompanied him.

APPLICATIONS FOR WITNESSES REFUSED.

Mr. Okubo then applied for the Court's decision in regard to the remaining appli-

cations for witnesses to be called for the defence.

The Court retired to consider its decision, and on returning the presiding Judge announced that all the other applications were rejected.

#### COUNSELS' PROTEST.

On hearing this decision Mr. Ogawa, the Tokyo barrister, rose and addressed the Court. Counsel said that his fellow barristers and himself had felt confident that their applications for the calling of witnesses would be granted, but the Court having rejected the whole of the applications, it was now necessary for counsel to discuss their future line of action. He then applied to the Court that counsel be allowed to withdraw for a consultation. The Court agreed, and at 10.10 adjourned until such time as the barristers had concluded their consultation.

On the Court re-assembling at 11.05 Mr. Okubo, on behalf of all the barristers appearing for the defence, rose to make a statement, and a little wave of excited expectancy passed through the Court. Counsel commenced by saying that the present case involved a criminal charge of a very grave and serious nature. Counsel defending the accused had done all they could to accumulate evidence on behalf of their clients, with the object of disclosing the real circumstances attaching to the case. They had then asked for the Court's approval of their applications to call certain important witnesses, and the Court had granted one or two of these applications, reserving its decision in regard to the remainder. Counsel himself, and those appearing with him, had been fully confident that the Court would approve of as many of these applications as were considered necessary, but these anticipations had now been dispelled by the Court's decision that the whole of the should be rejected. The only conclusion remaining applications for witnesses which could be come to in these circumstances was that the Court was already convinced, in its own mind, that the accused men were guilty, and did not consider it necessary to examine the points for the defence which counsel submitted were of a most important nature. In these circumstances counsel for the defence were forced to assume that the Court was not an impartial tribunal, and that it was prejudiced against the interests of the accused. Consequently, it

had been decided by the barristers appearing for the accused that, in accordance with Article 41 of the Code of Criminal Procedure, a motion should be applied for, for the exclusion of the Judges on the ground that there were circumstances forming sufficient ground of suspicion that they would give a biased judgement. Counsel concluded by remarking that this step had been decided upon with a view to upholding the dignity of the judiciary, and to fully protect the rights of barristers and their clients.

The motion was received by the Court without comment, and it was announced that the proceedings were suspended *sine die*.

### THE FOURTEENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

#### PRISONERS' APPLICATIONS FOR WITNESSES REJECTED.

#### PROCURATOR'S SPEECH.

SEOUL, Aug. 23.

After an adjournment of about a month—during which application was made to two Courts for a re-trial of the case on the ground that the Judges before whom the case had been heard were prejudiced, both appeals being rejected—the hearing of the "conspiracy" case was resumed to-day. The general arrangements and appearance of the Court were the same as before, with one important exception—that everyone wore some mark of the national mourning into which Japan has been plunged since these proceedings were temporarily suspended. Judge Tsukahara and the two Associate Judges appeared in their semi-military uniforms, as before, but with a black band of crape round their arms. All the other officials, barristers, and spectators in Court wearing foreign-style clothes also had these badges of mourning, while those who wore kimono had the small butterfly-shaped black bows now seen everywhere in Japan pinned on the right breast. Even the 123 "conspirators" appeared in Court wearing these little black bows.

There were again a large number of spectators in Court, officials, journalists, missionaries, and the general public, so far as accommodation permitted. Among the various officials who sat behind the

Judges were Major-General Akashi, Chief of Police and Commander of the Gendarmerie in Korea, Mr. Nakayama, Chief Judge of the Seoul District Court, Mr. Ikebe, Director of the Foreign Affairs Bureau in the Government-General, and Police-Inspector Watanabe, whose name has been mentioned as being responsible for the alleged torture of the accused. The Japanese and foreign Press was well represented, among others in Court being Mr. Ohl, the Peking correspondent of the *New York Herald*, Mr. Bolljahn, the Seoul correspondent of the Associated Press, Mr. Zumoto, proprietor and editor of the *Japan Times*, and Mr. Yamagata, editor of the *Seoul Press*. The seats provided for the public were fully occupied, there being about 200 Koreans and about a dozen foreigners present, including four ladies.

The precautions taken outside and inside the Court were much the same as before, though there seemed to be a slight relaxing of the rules and regulations as compared with those enforced during the early days of the trial. The close scrutiny of the Koreans entering the Court to listen to the proceedings was carried out as carefully as before. Every Korean, man or woman, was searched at an inner gate before being admitted to the Court, while the general public were kept a good distance away from the entrance to the Court when the accused men were being taken in and out. The prisoners were handcuffed as before, and were tied together in parties of about ten men, each party escorted by two or three warders. On entering the Court the prisoners' bonds were removed, and they took their seats in the centre of the Court as before. All the accused appeared to be in good health, and some of them looked very much better than when I last saw them. All had had their hair cropped close to the head, and had been recently shaved. It seemed to me that Baron Yun and Yang Kistak looked thinner and more tired than they did before. The proceedings were opened about 9.30, and no reference was made by the Presiding Judge to the hearing of the case being resumed before the same Court. He merely announced that the proceedings were to be resumed.

#### PLEAS OF ALIBI.

At the outset the Judge said that those of the accused who were not represented by counsel could make a statement in their defence if they wished to. On

this notification being interpreted about twenty of the accused—including Ok Kwan-pin, Paik Yong-sok, Kang Pong-oi, Cho Mun-paik, Kim Syong-haing, O Taik-oui, Pak Chion-hyong, and Choi Syong-min—rose to make statements. All these men denied having gone to Syen Chuen and other railway stations on the days alleged with the object of assassinating the Governor-General, and said that they could prove, by the evidence of witnesses whom they asked should be called, that they were not where the prosecution said they were. Several of the accused who were defended by counsel also applied to call witnesses to prove alibi. The Court at first declined the applications of these men on the ground that they were defended by counsel who could speak on their behalf, but the accused begged hard to be allowed to speak, some of them continuing to talk in spite of the Court's refusal to listen to them. Finally the Presiding Judge consented to hear them, when they made statements to the same effect as the other accused—that they were either at home, or were away from their homes on business, at the time they were charged with being at the railway-stations waiting for an opportunity to assassinate the Governor-General. These men also applied to call witnesses to prove these alibi. With the exception of Ok Kwan-pin, all the accused spoke in Korean, and owing to the very low tone in which their statements were interpreted into Japanese, I found it extremely difficult to follow what the interpreter was saying. The interpreter's version of O Taik-oui's statement, in particular, was addressed to the Court in such a low tone that I could not hear a word of it. Altogether, things were rather confused at this stage. The accused were so anxious to get a hearing that before one man had finished another would commence, and he was shouted at by the Judge and interpreter to keep quiet. One of the accused held up his hand, apparently with the object of attracting the attention of the Court, and was severely reprimanded by the Judge for such unruly conduct, whereupon the unlucky man sank down on his seat without another word.

Ok Kwan-pin, who spoke in Japanese, said that he was studying at the Taisong school in December 1910 (new calendar), and on the 22nd of that month a ceremony was held in connection with the closing of the school for the holidays. He gave



an address on that occasion in the name of the students of the school. On the following two days the students' society held meetings, and on each day he gave an address, the audience on one occasion numbering 250 people. It was therefore clearly impossible for him to have gone to the railway stations as alleged, and he applied to the Court for the summoning of the man who took the chair at the students' meeting to prove the alibi. Ok further stated that he wished to ask a few questions.

The Presiding Judge said that the Court did not consider it necessary to listen to any questions from accused, who was then ordered to desist from making any further statement.

Procurator Sakai, referring to the applications which had been made by the various prisoners above mentioned for the calling of witnesses, said he was of the same opinion now as on the previous occasion when similar requests were made—that the applications should be dismissed.

The Court then gave its decision in regard to the applications of accused for the calling of witnesses, announcing that all the applications were dismissed, the Court not considering that there was any necessity to accept any of the applications. The Court further announced that the examination of the facts of the case had been concluded, and the Chief Procurator would now address the Court. It was proper for the accused to remain standing during the Procurator's address, but as his speech would be a very lengthy one, the Court would permit the accused to remain in their seats.

#### THE PROCURATOR'S ADDRESS.

The Chief Procurator then rose to address the Court, and made a lengthy speech in which the history of the case was reviewed in great detail. He said:—

#### THE EVIDENCE.

"I shall first proceed to deal with the statements made by the accused at the police headquarters and the Procurators' Office. Of the 123 men now accused, only one—Kim Il-chon—has confessed to the facts of his crime in the open Court. All the rest have denied the facts, and have even withdrawn their own confessions made at the police headquarters and before the Procurator. According to the records, however, the majority of the accused confessed in detail the facts of this

conspiracy when examined at the police headquarters and at the Procurators' Office; in fact, these extraordinarily voluminous records now before the Court are really the written confessions of these men. There are, of course, other exhibits—the records of the evidence given by witnesses, and certain articles which have been seized from those connected with this case,—but the largest part and the strongest part of the evidence, in my opinion, is the record of the confessions of the accused themselves. Therefore I recognise the necessity of dealing with the question of the reliability of these records as exhibits.

#### WHY THE CONFESSIONS WERE WITHDRAWN.

"Before taking up this question of the reliability, I think it may be necessary to devote a few words to the manner and circumstances in which the accused, on being examined in Court, have denied their responsibility for the present charge which has been brought against them. It is quite a common occurrence in a Criminal Court to find an accused man denying the charge preferred against him; it is so common that it is not necessary to call any special attention to it. In Korea, however, this sort of thing is notoriously common, and I think the explanation is that the majority of the Koreans do not understand the methods of Court procedure. Hitherto the system of Court procedure followed in Korea has been one based upon the old Chinese principle, by which decisions were delivered based mainly upon the confessions of the accused themselves. Consequently, the Koreans generally have the idea that a Court will find them innocent if they simply deny the facts brought against them, even though there may be other evidence to prove their guilt. It is probably almost impossible to find in the peninsula a man who realises that he cannot be found innocent of a crime when there is other evidence besides his own confessions against him, and who realises that it is better to confess the truth of the charge and appeal for leniency to be shown him. Moreover, the Koreans are a people who attach great importance to outward show, and would feel ashamed to face the criticism that they were men lacking in spirit and purpose because they confessed their crime before others. On the contrary, they have the idea that men who behave disrespectfully and show

their obstinacy in a place of authority like this Court are great men. Such perverted ideas are widely held by the Koreans. The denial of the facts of the case by the majority of the accused now charged is due, I believe, to one or the other of these two reasons, and I think that if they had been examined one by one in the open Court, many of them would have confessed to their part in the conspiracy, just as they did at the preliminary examination. This individual examination, however, was impracticable, as the Court procedure provides that the accused must be examined together at one place.

#### "UNACCEPTABLE" POINTS IN EVIDENCE.

"Turning now to consider the nature of the denials made by the accused of the facts of the case, I find there are many points which cannot be accepted. For example, some of the accused denied things which were quite evident, as in the case of Yang Chong-min, who in reply to a question said that his house at Sak Ching-ung was so small that it could scarcely be comfortable, lived therein. Yet it is clear, from a plan of the house attached to the Court records, that there are three rooms in this house which stands on a terrace of ground, and can by no means be considered so small as he made it out to be. The woman Kim Ching-whan said that he did not know where Yang's house was. Now, Kim had lived in Sŏn Chŏn for several years, and as the place was only a small country hamlet he ought to know every hole and corner of it. Moreover, Yang is a well-known name in the district, and Kim's statement that he did not know his house's location, is

"No, with a number of the accused, I am sure, will admit that they are persons who rarely if ever tell others in making their report to the Court, anything. One says that he was not at all in the conspiracy, and another says that he was not at all in the conspiracy. This sort of story is to be expected from a group of persons who were so placed, when the first name to be called, Azeda, another man said that he was in the market selling beans on the day in question, which he could be proved by reference to his book, when upon rather than who was examined the same day pleaded that he, too, was in

the market, selling rice. One said that he was sick on the day under notice, another that he was nursing his sick father that day, or was at the bedside of a sick cousin. In short, very little importance can be attached to their denials, which cannot be regarded as truthful and sincere statements.

#### THE ALLEGATIONS OF TORTURE.

"The accused who withdrew the statements made by them at the police headquarters and the Procurators' Office alleged that they had been forced to spin these stories as a result of the assaults, ill-treatment, and unbearable torture to which they were subjected at the police headquarters. They also said that they had confessed to the facts of this conspiracy at the Procurators' Office because they were threatened that if they failed to recognise their former confessions they would be sent back to the police to be subjected to further 'torturing.' Their

statements on this head were almost all the same. An instance of the extremity to which they went was shown when the Presiding Judge asked what were the objects of the New People's Society, in answer to their first reply was that they had been subjected to severe punishment at the police headquarters. Instead of replying to the question of fact, they made these improper references to ill-treatment. The allegations of persons I that they were subjected to cruel treatment at the hands of the police are merely commonplace subterfuges to invalidate their former statements made to the police and the Procurator. This sort of thing is often done in Korea, to say nothing of the present case, and in Japan also, and such charges are **not** worth listening to. But since these charges have been made against the police, and it has been alleged that the police resorted to ill-treatment of the accused in connection with the case, I wish to absolutely deny the truth of any statements, which have no foundation in fact. When the accused in the present case were taken to prison to await trial examination was physically exacting, and some of the 123 men had even a slight fever, but none had been subjected to such ill-treatment."

#### THE MISSION SCHOOL AND THE "CONSPIRATORS."

"Any one examining this case from the very beginning, and taking into con-

sideration the contents of the confessions made by the accused, will, I think, find it a very easy matter to solve this question of alleged ill-treatment on the part of the police. The present conspiracy case had its beginning in the examination of the men who were arrested at Nap Chyongjong on a charge of burglary with violence. During the examination of these men it gradually came to light that something more serious was underlying the charge which had been preferred against them. The statements made by these men in the course of their examination implicated a small number of men at Chyongju, and some of the teachers and students at the Syen Chuen mission school. At first it was thought that the meeting place of these men was Yang Chom-miung's office at Syen Chuen, but as the investigation was proceeded with fresh facts came to light. It was found the majority of the teachers and students at the Syen Chuen mission school were connected with the conspiracy, together with a number of Korean pastors in Christian churches and a number of the leading men in various adjoining districts. It was also discovered that their meeting-place, when they gathered in large numbers, was not Yang's office, but the No. 8 class-room at the mission school. It was also found that in No. 7 class-room the wall was so constructed as to allow a person to ascend above the ceiling, and it is an established fact that pistols were stored in this secret hiding-place.

Those concerned in the plot were not only men from New Wiju, Kwaksao, Chuisan, and Pyong-yang, but from Shin Chuen, in Whanghai-do. It was further found that this case was closely connected with the charge of burglary with violence against An Myung-keut, which had been already decided in the Courts, and the charge of violation of the Peace Preservation Law preferred against Yang Ki-ak. Examination of the accused arrested in New Wiju disclosed the fact that they had accomplices at Wiju and Yong Chuen, while the examination of the men from Pyongyang led to further serious developments of the case, it being found that they were acting in conjunction with certain parties in Seoul. In this way the real position of what is known as the New People's Society came to be known. The number of persons who through these records can be traced as being directly concerned in this affair is about 500. It is not only almost im-

possible to examine all these men one after another on all the intricate points of this affair, but if it were done it is certain that the ramifications of the case would extend still further until a boundless number of men were implicated. To explain the situation metaphorically, the present conspiracy case started in a small stream at Nap Chyongjong, and being joined by numerous tributaries, became a gigantic river at Pyong-yang.

This case, when it first came to the notice of the police headquarters, was regarded as a simple one of armed burglary, but investigation brought out the fact that the case was extremely serious and complicated. This clearly shows that the authorities had no idea of the nature of the case when the investigation was first started, and never imagined that it would turn out as it did. None of the facts in this case, important or unimportant, were known to the officers concerned in the investigation when they commenced their examination of the accused; they were discovered solely from the voluntary statements of the accused men during their examination. It is obvious that the officers who conducted the examination of these men, not knowing anything of the facts which only subsequently transpired, could not have resorted to any measures calculated to force statements from the accused. Therefore it seems to me that we can absolutely deny the allegations which have been made by the accused that they were subjected to ill-treatment at the hands of the officers who examined them, with the object of forcing them to make incriminating statements.

In regard to the relations existing between the accused, this is a matter which the officers conducting the investigation could not even have suspected. Let me quote two instances. A revolver which Im Hyong-wha had used was entrusted by him to his brother, Im Tong-wha, and a pistol belonging to Yi Keun-taik and a sword-stick were given by him to an elderly relative named Yi Chin-chai. These facts were disclosed during the statements of accused, and as a result of dofficial searches the weapons referred to were found, and are now before the Court as exhibits. Again, in regard to certain matters which have no immediate connection with the present charge—such as the plot against Prince Ito, and the meeting of certain of the accused with Yi Chai-myong, who stabbed Count Yi

Wan-yong,—all these facts became known for the first time to the officers conducting the examination of the accused during the progress of that examination. The authorities had closely investigated these affairs at the time, but had failed to get any definite information. Examples of this sort, where facts entirely new to the authorities were disclosed by the accused, are really too frequent to be enumerated. The fact is that all the complicated facts regarding this conspiracy were brought to light through the voluntary statements of the accused themselves, or their confessions supplied the investigators with the necessary material for making further inquiries, but the investigators did not force these statements from the accused. These confessions are substantiated by various exhibits and the evidence given by witnesses. I am thus forced to conclude that the confessions which were made by the accused correspond to the facts, and at the same time I deny that there is any foundation for the allegations which have been made by these men of torture by the police authorities.

#### THE "VOLUNTARY" CONFESSIONS.

"In regard to the confessions of the accused in the Procurator's Office, I assert that these, too, were voluntary confessions. Accused have said that the reason they have since withdrawn their confessions in open Court is that they were forced to make those confessions, and were threatened that if they did not admit them before the Procurator they would be sent back to the police headquarters. Now, as a matter of fact, out of the enormous number of men who were examined in connection with this case, there were three or four men who were sent back to the police headquarters from the Procurator's Office since November last, when the Procurator first took up the case. These men were sent back, however, either for convenience of examination or because it was impossible for the Procurator to conclude his examination of them that day. Until the examination is concluded a prisoner cannot be sent to jail, as the Court cannot issue a warrant for his arrest, and in such a case the accused would be sent back to the police to await the conclusion of his examination. These are incidents which are unavoidable owing to the procedure which has to be followed in such cases, but the allegation that the accused were set back to the police headquarters

with the object of obtaining confessions from them by force is absolutely unfounded.

"The statements of those who confessed at the police headquarters, when compared with their confessions at the Procurators' Office, are found to differ not a little. This indicates that their second confession was the result of repeated consideration of their position, and of their having decided to amend their former statements in order to make them as truthful as possible. It cannot be admitted that they simply answered 'yes' to the questions which were put to them by the Procurator. Further, there are some among the accused who confessed two or three times when examined by the Procurator. Yang Chom-miung and Kim Il-chom were examined three times by the Procurator, while O Taik-eui and Yi Keun-taik were examined twice. They all confessed their guilt on each occasion. As these men were summoned to the Procurators' Office after they had been formally put under arrest, there is no possibility of their having been threatened with being sent back to the police.

"There are some among the accused who persisted in their former statements even when confronted with other men: Yang Chom-miung, Yi Chong-sun, and Chang Kung-chin are some of these men. Then there are others like Cha Li-sik, who on being confronted with others of the accused, changed his former confession. It must be admitted that the confessions made by the accused in the Procurators' Office were made in all sincerity and in a frank and open-hearted manner, the result of repentance for the wrong they had done. This becomes still more clear when the confessions made at the police headquarters are generalised with those made before the Procurator, compared with the various exhibits which have been placed before the Court, and, further, compared with the confession of Kim Il-chom made in open Court. The whole circumstances of the affair undoubtedly bear the impress of truth, and this is the reason why I submit that the confessions of the accused are the strongest and most convincing evidence in this case.

#### THE EXAGGERATED "CONFESSIONS."

"Before going any further I would like to say a few words about the two men Paik Nai-hyo and Chang Pil-sok, who

although they made confessions are not among the accused to-day. At the Procurator's Office Paik denied his former statement, but Chang persisted in his confession. There was some doubt, however, about these men's confessions, and the police made further investigations into the matter, and found that at the time the other men accused in the present case went out to attempt to execute their plans at the railway station, these two men were under arrest by the gendarmerie on suspicion of being concerned in another offence. This fact being established, both men were acquitted of the present charge. These two men, however, were members of the Nap Chyong-jong branch of the New People's Society, and it is evident that they took part in the meetings of conspirators to discuss the proposed assassination of the Governor-General, and also that they were guilty of having broken into houses and obtained money by threats. It was only by mere accident that these men did not go with the others to the railway station at Syen Chuen on November 27th and 28th (old calendar). They had already committed armed burglary and had taken part in the deliberations of the other conspirators, and knowing that they could not deny these facts they confessed even more, but in my opinion this does not in the least lessen the importance and reliability of the confessions of the other accused.

#### THE NEW PEOPLE'S SOCIETY.

"I now propose to deal with the history of the New People's Society, the nature and objects of which body can be clearly understood from a perusal of the records of the examination of Baron Yun, Yang Ki-tak, Im Chi-chong, and a good number of the other accused. This Society was first organised in America by a number of Koreans residing there. When, in 1905, the Japan-Korea Treaty was signed, An Chang-ho and his party, who were then in America, came to the conclusion that by that Treaty the sovereign rights of the Han Dynasty were lost. Those of his fellow-countrymen who had the same idea he inflamed with anti-Japanese sentiments, which he also endeavoured to disseminate among the Korean people in general. The following year An returned to Korea, and obtained the support of other men who had the same ideas as his own. He succeeded in adding to the roll of the Society, at

various times and on various occasions, Baron Yun, Yang Ki-tak, Im Tong-sol, Yi Seung-hun, and An Tai-kuk. In this way the New People's Society was organised in Korea.

"In 1907 the Korean Emperor abdicated in favour of the Heir to the Throne, and this was followed by the Seven Article Treaty between Japan and Korea. These events appeared to the members of the Society to confirm their idea that the national rights of the Korean people had gone completely out of existence. Consequently, they became very active in planning out schemes for the restoration of their national prestige. Among other things they proposed to establish schools so that young Koreans might be educated there and be encouraged to develop what these men termed the 'Korean spirit.' It was also proposed to establish various industries, the profits of which were to be devoted to the carrying-out of their further plans. Further, a plan was formulated for emigrating to Chientao, to escape the strict official surveillance to which they were subjected in Korea, and there set up an independent State of their own. It was also planned to establish a military school at Chientao, and to start a war of independence when Japan happened to be at war with China or the United States, with the object of driving the Japanese out of Korea, and recovering the lost national rights.

"As the most radical way of carrying out their plans, the leaders of this movement decided to assassinate the former Korean Ministers of State, who were known by such scornful terms as 'the five traitors' and 'the seven betrayers.' It was also decided to kill successive Residents-General in order to keep the minds of the people constantly inflamed and agitated, and to let the outside world know that the Koreans were not content to be subjugated by Japan. It was hoped in this way to obtain the sympathy of the Powers. These, then, were the objects of the New People's Society.

"The next step was to appoint local leaders in the various provinces, who selected others as their subordinates; various branches were established, and the work of obtaining new members in the country was started on. They also published newspapers and periodicals abroad, and in many ways endeavoured to inspire in the minds of the Korean people the ideas which they wished to spread. So actively was this movement carried on

that in 1910 and 1911 there were about 200,000 members scattered about all over the world. The Society also had a number of different names. In San Francisco, Honolulu, Vladivostok, Habarovsk, Yenchu, and Harbin it was known as the National Society. In Korea it was variously known as the Young Men's Classmates' Society, Young Men's Companionship Society, Kauchang Tei, Yunhak Tei, and Kunchang Tei. All these facts have been testified to by the accused who were arrested in Pyong-yang. Other branches under different names were established at Nap Chyongjong at Yongchuen and Yangchi.

#### "CONSPIRATORS" AS IMPORT-CHECKERS.

There was also a branch at Yi Seung-hun's office at Syen Chuen, where a direct import business was carried on in conjunction with the Pama Yang-ben at Chemulpo. These offices were apparently ordinary commercial establishments, but according to statements made by certain of the accused, the real object of these concerns was to check the import of Japanese goods into Korea. The New People's Society also established a porcelain factory and the Taikuk bookstore, which were also generally considered to be ordinary commercial establishments, but in the statements of some of the accused to the effect that a certain one of their number was appointed Director of the Industrial Department of the Society are taken into consideration, it is not difficult to imagine that these concerns were established with the object of making money for the Society.

#### THE SCHOOLS.

In regard to the establishment of schools by the Society the Taisong school was first founded at Pyong-yang in 1908, Baron Yun being appointed Director. Here was published a magazine called *Yo-th*, which was the organ of the school. The New People's Society also established the Kamsung school at Nap Chyongjong, the Yongsil school at Wiju, the Shinan school at Chyongju, and various other schools elsewhere, in this way devoting itself to inculcating the 'Korean spirit' in the young Koreans. Certain of these schools, too, were conducted by principals, teachers, and clerks who were all members of the Society, who were placed in these positions in order that they might be able to carry on the work

of the Society in many different ways. The members of the Society thus had the advantage of being able to hold their secret meetings in the schools.

#### THE MISSION OF ASSASSINATION.

Then, in regard to the plans of the Society in regard to assassination, a plan was made to murder Prince Ito when, as Resident-General, he made a trip through the country with the Emperor. In December 1909 an attack was made upon Count Yi Wan-yong, who was stabbed by Yi Chai-myong. Two of the accomplices, Choi Chu-rik and Kim Chan-o, are now accused in this case. It has also been stated by certain of the accused from Pyong-yang that for some years members of the Society have been trying to assassinate Prince Katsura, Prince Yamagata, Resident-General Sone, Mr. Yamagata, the Director of the Political Affairs Bureau in the then Residency-General, and others. Some of these attempts were to have been made in Japan.

I have now given an outline of the formation, nature, and objects of the New People's Society. When the annexation of Korea was effected the members of the Society became extremely indignant, and plotted the assassination of the Governor-General, the conspiracy which has led to the present case. The majority of the accused are members of the Society, of which Baron Yun was the Director, and Lye Tong-sol the assistant Director. The local leaders in North and South Pyongan do were An Tai-kuk and Yi Seung-hun, while Yang Ki-tak and Im Chi-chong were the leading spirits in the central districts. This fact has been testified by many of the accused.

#### THE CASE OF BARON YUN.

I shall now proceed to examine the case of Baron Yun and trace his connection with the conspiracy, and his meetings in Seoul with Yang Ki-tak and others. When examined in open Court, Yun and the others who planned and arranged this conspiracy denied all responsibility. Yun admitted that he had clearly confessed to the plot at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office, but in defence of his subsequent denial in open Court asserts that on learning that all the other accused had confessed, he did the same, thinking that he had been dragged into the affair by the statements of others. For his part, he

did not wish to drag other people into the affair. This explanation is really most unreasonable. If a man is mentioned by another as being his accomplice in crime, but knows that he is not guilty, it is only natural for him to protest his innocence to the very last, and produce counter-evidence to support his plea. That Yun replied at random, and admitted things which were false, cannot possibly be believed. Accused has also stated, in explanation of his confession to the police and the Procurator, that he could not free himself of the charge by merely denying the points put to him, so he thought he would receive more liberal treatment if he confessed. This, too, seems to me a most unreasonable contention. If he has committed a grave crime, it is quite impossible that he should be relieved of even a portion of his responsibility merely because he confessed to the facts. Such an explanation offered by an ignorant man would be pardonable, but not from a man of the standing, education, and reputation of Yun. Therefore it is my opinion that the confessions made by Yun at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office represent statements of fact, and are not merely a fabrication, as he now suggests.

"Yun has admitted in the course of his examination in Court that he was appointed Principal of the Taisong school on the recommendation of An Chang-ho, and that he also accepted the post of President of the New People's Society, approving as he did of the principle of encouraging the 'Korean spirit' among young Koreans. He also admitted that he was indignant at the time of the annexation. All these statements corresponded to those made by him in his confessions to the police and the Procurator. The annexation was effected in August 1910, and the conference of the principal movers in this affair took place in September, so that we may presume that at that time Yun was then full of regret and indignation at the political change which had taken place. Now let us see what Yang Chom-miung said in the course of his examination at the police headquarters. He said he attended a school celebration meeting at Kaisong and met Baron Yun there. Yun told him that he had planned the assassination of the Governor-General, and intended to send Ok Kwan-plu to execute the mission, but

the plan had failed. The scheme must be carried out, however, and as Yi Seung-hun was away, Yun said that Yang Chom-miung would have to act in his place. This is entered on the records as having been said by Yun.

"Now, in the police record of the examination of Yi Yong-wha, this man says he accompanied Yang to Seoul in May 1911 and then went to Kaisong to attend the school meeting and meet Baron Yun. This man Yi Yong-wha is the head of the Nap Chyongjong branch of the New People's Society, while Yang Chom-miung held a similar position at Syen Chuen. Now, considering that these two men, both local leaders of the Society, declare they saw the Baron about May 1911 and consulted him about the conspiracy, it is perfectly clear that Yun is gravely connected with this case. The fact that these two men did attend the school meeting at Kaisong is established by the roll-call taken by one Gillett (of the Y.M.C.A.), and sent by him to Baron Yun at the latter's written request. Then there is another point: the accused Chang Ik-no, in the course of his examination by the police, said that he was told, when in Seoul in December 1910, that the Governor-General was about to make a trip north. On learning this news he and Yi Choon-ha went at once to Kaisong, where they saw the Baron next day. They had dinner with Yun, and told him the date and time of the Governor-General's expected arrival. The Baron expressed his appreciation of what they had done in telling him this, and said it was a good chance for them to carry out their plans. He told them to go back to their districts and tell their comrades to make up their minds to carry out the plot. Meanwhile he (Baron Yun) would make further inquiries about the Governor-General's coming, and would communicate the result to the men at Pyong-yang. This evidence also shows the close connection which Baron Yun had with the operations of the New Peoples' Society, and if we take the evidence of these three men together, it gives quite sufficient ground for us to conclude that Baron Yun was one of the principal figures in the present conspiracy.

"I shall next refer to the meetings between Baron Yun and others of the accused at Im Chi-Chong's house at Seoul, and their discussions about the conspiracy. Yun confessed very minutely

on this point in his examination at the police headquarters and the Procurator's Office, and this evidence may be outlined as follows: In August, September, and November 1910 he attended meetings at Im's house in Seoul on three occasions. There were also present Yang Ki-tak, Im Chi-Chong, An Tai-kuk, Ok Kwan-pin, and Kang Mun-su. After talking over their plans for the assassination of the Governor-General, Baron Yun ordered Ok Kwan-pin to proceed to North Pyongan-do. Yun added that he did not know whether Yi Seung-hun attended these conferences or not. The police records of the statements made by Yi Chi-keun and Kang Mun-su contain confirmatory statements, though they added that they saw Yi Seung-hun at these meetings. From this evidence and from the statements of Baron Yun himself it is proved beyond doubt that he was at Im's house at least three times during the months mentioned. Further, the records show that Ok Kwan-pin, An Tai-kuk, and Yi Seung-hun admitted having met together at this house, and they also admitted having told the local members of the Society that the plot to kill the Governor-General was the result of a conference they had had with Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak. Thus this question of Yun and the others meeting at Seoul to discuss the conspiracy is absolutely established.

#### THE OTHER "RINGLEADERS."

"Let us now investigate the records of Yang Ki-tak, Im Chi-chong, An Tai-kuk, and Ok Kwan-pin. These men have all denied the Baron's connection with the plot, and have also denied his connection with the attempt to assassinate the Governor-General. They stated, however, that the Baron conferred with them in Seoul at the beginning of November 1910 in connection with the proposal to emigrate to Chientao. I believe that this emigration scheme was one of the objects of the New Peoples' Society, and I do not hesitate to apply these statements to prove the fact that the accused did meet together in Seoul. The only point requiring explanation is the date and time of these meetings. Yi Chi-keun says the first two meetings were held on August 7th and October 15th, 1910, which dates he said he was certain of because the first day was the birthday of his only son, and the second was his

own birthday, but as these events occurred some time ago, there is considerable likelihood of a mistake being made. In these circumstances it is not proper to base any decision absolutely on the evidence of one man, especially when we come to consider that it was on October 15th that the accused, armed with revolvers, proceeded to certain railway stations with the object of carrying out the plans of the conspiracy. I believe, therefore, that the meeting in Seoul was held before the date mentioned, and accordingly I do not attach any weight to the evidence of Yi Chi-keun on this point. Baron Yun has said that he does not remember the dates of these meetings, admitting only that he thought they were about the time mentioned. Kang Mun-su also stated that he could not remember the dates. This is the reason why the Procurator concerned with their examination did not put down the dates definitely in his indictment, and I maintain that there is no necessity to decide this question more definitely.

#### THE EVIDENCE FOR THE DEFENCE.

"Voluminous documentary evidence has been put in by counsel for the defence. One of these exhibits, described as a name-list of official members of the church at Kaisong, is nothing more than a programme of the proceedings at Kaisong (on the day Baron Yun is alleged to have been in Seoul). Another exhibit (a roll-book of teachers in a school) refers to matters up to about 11 a.m. on that day, and a note-book (belonging to Baron Yun) which has been put in has the part referring to the period from September 12th to October 14th, 1910, missing. It is this period which we are concerned with in deciding the case. In short, the evidence which has been put in fails to prove that Baron Yun was not in Seoul on the dates and in the circumstances stated, and in my opinion the fact is clearly proved that Baron Yun and the other accused met together at Im's house in Seoul, and planned the present conspiracy."

On the conclusion of the Procurator's speech the Court adjourned for time, and in the afternoon the speech was translated into Korean by the Court interpreter, after which the proceedings were adjourned.



## THE FIFTEENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### SPEECH BY ASSISTANT PROCURATOR.

SEOUL, Aug. 24.

Following the speech made by the Chief Procurator yesterday, the Assistant Procurator addressed the Court to-day, reviewing various aspects of the case not touched upon by the Chief Procurator. In opening his speech, Procurator Sakai said that the accused had been under examination in the open Court for more than ten days. They had made their statements without reserve and submitted a number of protests, while their legal representatives had pleaded earnestly on their behalf, and had done all that could be done in their defence. Counsel had even resorted to the extreme step of lodging a protest against the Court on the ground that it was partial. The Procurator said the accused had every reason to be satisfied with what had been done on their behalf by their lawyers, and should be grateful for what they had done. Whether they really did appreciate what had been done for them he did not know, but he did know that they did not obey the Judge's orders, and had assumed an attitude towards the Court which was lacking in respect. Both by word and action they had been disrespectful, and he regretted this, because he feared it might have the effect of losing them the sympathy of the Court which they might otherwise have had. With this brief introduction the Procurator proceeded:—

"We do not know what ideas about this case may be held by those who assume, on the strength of the stereotyped complaints of torture which have been made, that the whole affair has no foundation in fact. Those who have investigated the circumstances in which this crime was discovered, have perused the records of the case, followed the way in which the investigation of the case was carried out, and have read the confessions of the accused at the police headquarters and the Procurator's Office, will not regard this case as the figment of a dream, as is alleged by the accused, but will definitely recognise the existence of the crime and the justice of the charge against the accused, many of whom were actually concerned in the carrying-out of the conspiracy. As the Chief Procurator pointed out yesterday in his address, the

confessions made by the accused at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office were voluntary acts, and I therefore consider that it is proper to conclude that the facts contained in the official indictment against the accused are now fully substantiated.

"I shall now refer to the confessions of 106 of the accused made at the police headquarters, the 74 confessions made in the Procurator's Court, the confession of Kim Il-chom, and the tacit confession of Yi Keni-tang, together with the exhibits seized in connection with the crime. [Yi denied his complicity in open Court, but admitted having confessed at the police headquarters and the Procurator's Office without having been tortured.] Pyong-yang being one of the centres of the New Peoples' Society, and the place of origin, as it may be called, of the present crime, I shall first deal with the movements of those men who lived in or near this place, afterwards dealing with those who lived in Syen Chuen, Nap Chyongjong, Chyongju, Chulsan, and Wiju.

### THE TREATY OF 1907.

"In 1907, when the so-called Seven Article Treaty was concluded between Japan and Korea, and national conditions in the latter country daily became more unfavourable, the members of the New People's Society became very indignant at the turn of affairs, and warmly pledged themselves to recover their lost national rights. In 1909 they got wind of the fact that the Korean Ministers of State were urging the annexation of the country by Japan, and Baron Yun, Yang Ki-tak, and others, availing themselves of the celebration of the first anniversary of the foundation of the Taisong school at Pyong-yang, proceeded to that place and held an athletic meeting and speech-making exercises, ostensibly as part of the celebration proceedings, but really for another purpose. Ok Kwan-pin delivered a speech, aggrieved and indignant in tone, dealing with loyalty and faithfulness to the Emperor of Korea and to the State, with the idea of stimulating the minds of those present to oppose the expected change in the status of Korea. Yun also called a meeting of members of the party at the Taikouk bookstore, and in the course of an address referred to the increasingly unfavourable condition of the nation's affairs, and said that the Ministers of State were about to turn traitor to their

own country. He then proposed that Count Yi Wan-yong, Song Pyong-chun, and other Korean Ministers should all be assassinated. The suggestion was approved by all present, and it was agreed that it would be advisable to have a brave and patriotic man, with no relations dependent upon him, to execute the plot. An Tai-kuk recommended Yi Chai-myong for the mission, and he gladly accepted the task, swearing that he would carry out the mission entrusted to him. Later on Yi made an attack upon Count Yi Wan-yong in Seoul, being assisted by several other men from Nap Chyongjong who were specially nominated for the purpose by Yi Seung-hun.

"About this time the members of the New People's Society established colleges and schools. These bodies kept in close communication with one another, and all aimed at realising objects of the Society. To quote an example—at the Taisong school a body known as the Chong-yun Tongchi Hoi was founded, the accused Chang Eung-chin being the superintendent, and La H-pung, Cha Li-sik, and Kim Tu-wha—teachers at the school—being appointed officials of this body. Another organisation known as the Myeunkang Hoi was established in another school, with Choi Chang-han as chairman. In the Suong-sil school the Tongchi Hoi was organised, Pyen Hsyo being appointed adviser, and Yun Wou-sin and An Se-whan being the chairman. Then the people interested in the New Peoples' Society set about organising what was called the Yun-hak Hoi, to which belonged Yi Tok-whan, Yi Choon-ha, O Tai-yung, Kim Tong-won, Chong Ik-no, Yun Syong-un, and others. All these various organisations carried on an anti-Japanese campaign with great vigour, while those among them who were teachers took advantage of the opportunities which offered for inculcating in the minds of their students dangerous theories regarding Japanese administration. The fact that these teachers devoted themselves to the propagation of anti-Japanese sentiments is proved by the manner in which the composition papers of their pupils, now before the Court as exhibits, are marked.

#### CHANG EUNG-CHIN.

"Chang Eung-chin in particular was a man specially favoured by An Chang-ho, the founder of the New Peoples' Society

in Korea, and of the Taisong school. When the attack upon Count Yi by Yi Chai-myong occurred, and the official surveillance of An Chang-ho became more strict, he found he could no longer be so active in his propaganda work, and he made preparations to flee abroad should occasion arise. He summoned Chang Eung-chin, who had graduated at the Higher Normal School in Tokyo, from Japan, giving him a generous sum for travelling expenses, and appointed him principal of Taisong school at a certain salary. After having entrusted Chang with the future care of the school, An went abroad, and became the leader of the members of the New Peoples' Society at Pyong-yang. In spite of his having instilled anti-Japanese ideas into the heads of the people with all the energy at his command, Chang declared in the course of his examination in open Court that he had no particular feelings at the time of the annexation of Korea. He said that his confession to the contrary at the police headquarters and before the Procurator was due to a misunderstanding—a plea which to me seems only to display his shameful cowardice, and is certainly not to be accepted in his favour.

"In about June or July a rumour got about that Japan was about to annex Korea, and this report made Chang more than ever dissatisfied with the condition of Korean national affairs. When, in the following August, it became known that the report was well founded, the lessons at the Taisong school were suspended from about the 10th pending the result of an inquiry into the political situation. On the 20th the formal declaration of the annexation was made, and in the evening Chang assembled his students at the school and addressed them. He expressed his deep regret that his country had been ruined, and that he and his fellow-countrymen had now to hoist the flag of the Rising Sun instead of their own flag. He concluded his inflammatory speech by declaring that they must restore the Taekuk flag as soon as possible. The speech was received by the audience with great excitement. They shouted "Ego!" [which may be translated as "By Heaven!"] and is used as an expression of profound grief, they stamped their feet on the floor, and indulged in such a noisy demonstration that it was some time before order could be restored.

## MEETING AT THE TAI SONG SCHOOL.

"The members of the New People's Society at Pyong-yang agreed to a general meeting being called in order to discuss the steps to be taken in regard to the political change which had taken place. On the 30th of that month the teachers and students of the Songsil school, the Hsin school, and the Keun myong school met at the Taisong school. There were also several members of the general public, the audience altogether numbering about 200 persons. An Tai-kuk, one of the accused, gave an address, bemoaning the fact that their country, which had existed for 4,000 years, had now been ruined by the annexation. He and his 20 million brother Koreans could not look on idly at what was being done, and he suggested that they should start upon a speech-making campaign in order to make known their opposition to the change which had been effected, and so appeal to the world's sympathy. Chang, however, opposed this suggestion, and it was abandoned. As one of the objects of the Society, however, was to attract foreign sympathy for the Koreans, it was suggested that the best course to pursue would be to consult the foreign residents in the district and obtain their opinion as to what should be done. It was finally settled that these foreigners should be consulted, and a number of men who were acquainted with the foreign residents—including La Il-pong, Yi Choon-ha, Kim Tong-won, Pyen In-syo, Cha Li-sik, Ok Song-pin, Yi Tok-whan, Chyong Ik-no, and An Kyong-nok—were accordingly instructed to approach the foreigners and ascertain their opinions. The meeting then adjourned, and two or three days later the leading members met at the Taikeuk book store to receive the report of the men who had been instructed to approach the foreigners. These men reported that the foreigners had expressed themselves as being opposed to the proposed speech-making campaign. An Tai-kuk, on hearing this, said that if they accepted the suggestion of the foreigners, it would mean that the Koreans, by remaining silent, would lose the sympathy of the foreign Powers, and before deciding anything further he urged that they should call upon the leader of the Society. Baron Yun, in order to hear what his opinion was. This proposition was discussed and finally accepted, and An, accompanied by Kim Tong-wha, went up

to Seoul to get Yun's opinion as to what should be done. Baron Yun said that the idea of delivering speeches should be abandoned, as it would be of no advantage to the party. Yun then pointed out that one of the objects of the New People's Society was the assassination of high officials, and he told the deputation that a better way of demonstrating their opposition to the annexation was by realising this object of the Society. Yun added that he would let An know later of a good opportunity for such a demonstration. An agreed with Yun that this scheme was better than the other, and he accordingly went back to Pyong-yang and told the members of the Society there what had been decided.

## FORMATION OF THE PLOT.

"At the beginning of August 1910 Yi Sang-choon, of the Anglo-Korean School, Kaisong, came to Pyong-yang as a messenger from Yun Chi-ho, and delivered instructions that representatives should be sent to Seoul to consult Yun in regard to the assassination plot. Yi Seung-hun, An Tai-kuk, and Ok Kwang-pin accordingly proceeded to the capital for this purpose, and about two days later, on the 10th, An and Ok returned to Pyong-yang. They called the members of their party to a meeting at the Tai-keuk book-store, and told them that they had met Baron Yun Chi-ho, Yang Ki-tak, Im Chi-chong, and others at Im's house at Seoul, and had been told that Count Terauchi, the Governor-General, was shortly going to visit North and South Pyongan provinces on a tour of inspection. An and Ok then proposed that the Governor-General should be assassinated at one of the principal railway stations between Seoul and New Wiju. It was considered that Pyong-yang would not be suitable for an attempt on the Governor-General, as it was always very strictly guarded on the occasion of such official visits, and it would be doubtful whether the plot could be carried out. At Syen Chuen, however, the conditions were considered more advantageous, as the station was a large one, and there were a large number of foreigners resident there, which fact led the conspirators to conclude that the Governor-General would alight there. It was also presumed that the precautions taken to protect him would be less strict there than at Pyong-yang, and in consideration

of these various circumstances An and Ok suggested that their efforts should be concentrated on this one spot. The leaders also stated that they would go to Syen Chuen with the others on this occasion. In order to make the necessary preparations for carrying out the plot, O Tai-yung and Cha Li-sik went to Antung to purchase revolvers, while other members of the party volunteered to collect weapons.

#### THE PYONG-YANG STATION EPISODE.

About the middle of August a messenger came to Pyong-yang from Baron Yun named Yi Sang-choon, bringing the information that the Governor-General would visit Pyong-yang about the 20th of the month. On receipt of this news, the leading members of the Society assembled at the Taikuk book-store and nominated the men who were to proceed to Syen Chuen and other places to tell the members of the Society to be in readiness. These men took with them a number of revolvers for distribution. An Taikuk left with a number of men for Syen Chuen. On the 15th the Pyong-yang men met at the Taisong school, where revolvers were distributed among them. Chang Eung-chin then outlined the plan of the arrangements for the following day, and the men were shown the places they were to take up at the station when the Governor-General arrived. Between two and three o'clock the next afternoon a party of about 21 men, including O Tai-yung and Choi Chun-chang, went to Pyong-yang station all carrying revolvers concealed under their clothes. It turned out, however, that the news of the Governor-General's coming was based on a false rumour, and so the plot failed. On the following September 15th and October 20th, on the strength of information received from Baron Yun in Seoul, the party again went to the station, but on both occasions the report was incorrect, and the plans for assassinating the Governor-General at the station failed. About the beginning of November Kim Do-beul, another messenger from Baron Yun, came to Pyong-yang from Seoul with instructions that the local leaders were to proceed to Seoul. The principal members met at the Taikuk book-store, when it was decided to send Yi Seung-hun, An Taikuk, Ok Kwan-pin, and a few others to the capital. These men met Baron Yun, Yang Kitak, and Im Chichong at

Im's house, and discussed plans for making the members of the party in North and South Pyongan provinces carry out the plot to assassinate the Governor-General. The news that the Governor-General was going to visit these districts on a tour of inspection was confirmed by information obtained from a certain source. It was agreed that the main force of the party should be concentrated at the Syen Chuen railway-station as before, and about the 10th of the month Ok returned to Pyong-yang and reported to the local members there what had been decided at the meeting at Seoul. On or about the following day An Taikuk returned to Pyong-yang, and a meeting was held at the Taikuk book-store, when the members were assured of the reliability of the latest news regarding the Governor-General's coming, and they were urged to resolve to carry out their plans with decision. Then, in the event of the plot being carried out successfully, it was arranged that the principles of the New Peoples' Society were to be published abroad and foreign sympathy thus secured. An Taikuk said that he and Yi Seung-hun would go to Syen Chuen with a party of members of the Society. An instructed Ok Kwan-pin to go to the places north of Chyongju with Kil Chin-hyong to inform the members there of what had been decided upon at Seoul, and to tell them to prepare to carry out their plans. Ok and Kil in due course left on their mission.

Yi Seung-hun at this time was in Seoul making inquiries into the political situation in the capital, and on learning that the Governor-General was actually leaving to make a tour of inspection in the north, went back to Pyong-yang. While he and other members of the Society were busily engaged in making their preparations for the carrying-out of the conspiracy, Kim Kwi and Kim Hong-yang, accompanying the accused O Taikuk and Pyen Kong-yul, arrived at Pyong-yang via Syen Chuen, to ascertain the definite date of the Governor-General's departure from Seoul on his tour. These men met at the Taikuk book-store and at the Taisong school to discuss their plans, and during this time definite news came from Baron Yun in Seoul that the Governor-General was leaving the capital for New Wiju on the November 27th. It had already been arranged that Yi Seung-hun and An Tai-

kuk were to go to Syen Chuen to take charge of the members of the Society there, but fearing that the plot might be detected if a number of men were to be seen moving about at the same time, it was arranged that Yi should first leave for Nap Chyongjong on the 25th, accompanied by La Seung-hni, An Syong-che, Kim Syong-haing, and Kim Eung-pong, who were all members of the Nap Chyongjong branch, but were in Pyong-yang to attend the meetings in connection with the plot. At Nap Chyongjong Yi called a meeting of the members of the Society, when he and the others took an oath that they would go to Syen Chuen, and thither he proceeded at the head of the party. "The following day An Tai-kuk, with Paik Nan-chun, Cho Mun-paik, Kang Pong-oo, Kim Kwi, O Taik-eui, and Pyen Kong-yul started for Syen Chuen from Pyong-yang, proceeding in small parties of two and three in order to avoid arousing the suspicions of the authorities.

"Just here I wish to devote a few words specially to the examination of the documentary evidence put in by Mr. Oknho, one of the counsel appearing for the defence, and also by the accused An Tai-kuk. From the facts appearing on the records before the Court, it appears that Yi Seung-hun was in Pyong-yang on or about November 17th, but this matter of the exact date is open to question. From a telegram addressed to the hotel-keeper at Pyong-yang by An Tai-kuk from Seoul, dated November 24th, it might be inferred that Yi reached Pyong-yang on the 25th, and then went on to Nap Chyongjong. It is impossible to contend, on the strength of the telegram which has been produced, that Yi had nothing to do with this conspiracy. In the books of the hotel-keeper at Pyong-yang there is an entry showing that a certain sum of money was remitted to Seoul by Yi Seung-hun, but so long as there is no evidence to show that Yi went direct back to the capital, this entry in the books is not sufficient to prove that Yi was not at Pyong-yang on or about the dates mentioned. It is also evident from the records that An Tai-kuk went to Pyong-yang from Seoul on or about November 13th or 14th, but as his movements during the following days up to the 24th or 25th are not clear, it is not improper to assume that he went back again to the capital, and about the 25th or 26th proceeded to Pyong-yang with Yi Seung-hun. As to the letters, invoices, and other documents addressed to An at

Seoul and put in as exhibits, it was quite a common matter for letters and other communications to be addressed to his office at the capital, which was the Seoul branch of the Taikenk book-store, and the mere fact of these letters being sent there is no proof that An himself was in Seoul at the time, and not at Pyong-yang.

#### MASS MEETING AT THE TAISONG SCHOOL.

"On the 26th a mass meeting of the Pyong-yang members of the New People's Society was held at the Taisong school, at which Chang Eung-chin presided. He allotted the men their positions to be taken up at the railway station to await the arrival of the Governor-General, and distributed among them the revolvers which he had obtained. It was also decided at this meeting that La H-pong should go to Eup Nai to assist the local members there. After it had been arranged that all the members of the Society should go to Pyong-yang railway station the next day, the 27th, at about two o'clock in the afternoon, and take up the positions which had been allotted to them, the meeting broke up. Next day all the members, with the exception of La H-pong, numbering about 20 men, proceeded to the railway station at the appointed time, and took up their positions. Some stood near the wicket, while others ranged themselves on both sides of the road near a monument, where they awaited the arrival of the Governor-General. The train arrived at the station at 2.15 p.m., but the Governor-General did not alight, and the train left again for New Wiju after a stop of about five minutes. The plot was therefore frustrated. Chang and the other leaders, however, had invitations to a reception to be given the Governor-General at the Keun-gan Club on the following day, the 28th, and they therefore knew that he would leave the train and stay in the city for the night. These men accordingly assembled at the Club on the evening of the 27th and discussed their plans, finally deciding to take advantage of the opportunity afforded them to carry out their scheme and assassinate the Governor-General the following night. Armed with revolvers, they went down to the station again, this time accompanied by La H-pong, who had come back unsuccessful from Eup Nai. The precautions taken to guard the station by the police and gendarmes were so strict, however, that the men

could not take up the positions they had occupied the previous day, so they altered their plans. Some ranged themselves along the front of the third-class waiting-room, and others stood on both sides of the road in front of the station. Chang Eung-chin and Yun Syong-un entered into this plot as the leading educator and leading business-man of the place respectively, and they were among those who were waiting for the Governor-General's arrival. The special train arrived at about 4.30 p.m., and Count Terauchi alighted from his car. Upon leaving the station he reviewed a number of soldiers who were drawn up in front of the station, after which he proceeded to the Keui-yang Club. During this time the accused were on the look-out for an opportunity to carry out their designs upon the Governor-General, but the guard which was kept by the police and gendarmes was so strict that they could not carry out their plans.

#### MEETING AFTER THE BANQUET.

"The accused Chang Eung-chin, seeing that the Governor-General had driven safely away in his carriage, gave orders to the conspirators that they were to meet him that evening at the Taisong school, whither he would proceed after attending the banquet to be given at the Club in honour of the Governor-General. This he did; on the conclusion of the function at the Club he proceeded to the school, where he addressed the men who were already assembled there. He said that it was not in his place to remonstrate with them for not having carried out their plans, as he himself had not been able to do so, although he was on the platform when the Governor-General arrived, but he made a series of searching inquiries as to why they had failed to act in the manner decided. The men all replied that their failure was due to the fact that the guard maintained was too strict to give them an opportunity to carry out the plot. Some of the men then spoke with a view to encouraging the others, pointing out that fair-heartedness would be detrimental to the carrying-out of their plans, and urging them to be brave. It was subsequently decided to make another attempt to assassinate the Governor-General when he started for Chinnampo the following day. Accordingly, on November 29th, they again went to the railway station, and took up the same positions

they had taken before. Count Terauchi arrived at the station in a carriage at about 8 a.m. and entered his train, which left for Chinnampo. Again the conspirators were unable to get an opportunity to carry out their plan. This is a general description of what happened at Pyong-yang; I shall next refer to the incidents which took place at Syen Chuen.

"At Syen Chuen there were three men—Syon Oo-hyok, Cha Kuin-sul, and Yi Yong-hyok—who were actively engaged in propagating this rebellious spirit in the minds of the students of the mission school, with a view to making them join the New People's Society. Syen Chuen was the administrative centre of the New People's Society in this district, which included Kwaksan, Chyongju, Chulsan, Wiju and Yong Chuen.

#### A LATER SCHEME.

"In August, 1910, Ok Kwanpin conferred with Yun Chi-ho and other leaders of the movement at Seoul in regard to the assassination of the Governor-General. They came to the conclusion that they should concentrate their best efforts at the railway-station at Syen Chuen. Ok went back to Pyong-yang, and after consulting the members there went on to Nap Chyongjong, Chyongju, and Eup Nai to explain the position to the members there. He thence proceeded to Syen Chuen, accompanied by Im Hyong-wha, from Nap Chyongjong. At Syen Chuen Ok invited all the local members and others interested in the principles of the Society to the Chong Chichom, Yi Seung-hun's head office where he related what had taken place at the conference at Seoul. Ok then unfolded the plot against the life of the Governor-General, and the proposal was approved. The members of the Society at Kwaksan, Chyongju, and Chul San also went to Syen Chuen to discuss the plot. Moreover, they dispatched the accused Yi Yong-hyok and Choi Tak-yun to China to purchase revolvers, while others collected from several sources revolvers and other weapons. Further, they caused the hot-blooded men of the party to commit armed burglary to obtain funds for the plot. When the reports of the Governor-General's coming on August 20th, September 15th, and October 20th were received the majority of the members, including the accused Sin Hyo-pyon and Cha Yung-chun, went to the railway-station at Syen Chuen, each carrying a re-

volver. The reports were incorrect and these successive failures to carry out the plot caused great dissatisfaction among the conspirators, who complained of the carelessness on the part of the leaders in Seoul in sending false reports. On November 14th or 15th Ok Kwan-pin went to Yi Seung-hun's office with Kil Chin-hyong, where he met the principal men of Syen Chuen. He told them that according to a report obtained from a certain reliable source the Governor-General was shortly starting on a tour of inspection to North and South Pyongan-do, and that they should seize this opportunity to kill him. This was the plot, continued Ok, which had been planned by him in conjunction with Yun Chi-ho.—it was an order issued by the Baron. Yang Ki-tak, and other leading men, and therefore must be executed. Ok called other meetings at the same place and in the No. 8 class-room of the Syen Chuen mission school. These meetings were attended by members of the Society from Kwaksan, Chyongju, Chul San, Yong Chuen, and Wiju, and also by the teachers and students of the school. At these meetings an account of the plot was given, and those present consented to take part. Ok then went to Wiju and district with Yi Keui-tang to canvass for further support for the Society, and shortly returned to Syen Chuen to take part in the conspiracy. Meanwhile, the other accused met in No. 8 class-room at the mission school and other places and delivered inflammatory speeches. Other collected revolvers, of which as many as 156 were obtained.

"About November 24th Kim Kwi and Kim Hongyang, of Whanghai-do, O Taik-eul, Pyen Kong-yul, and others, numbering more than 10 in all, came down to Syen Chuen to join the party there, whom they met at the mission school. Kim then delivered an inflammatory address in which he said that the national spirit was exceedingly well developed in that place, as was proved by the efficiency of the arrangements made by the local members for the assassination of the Governor-General. The exact date and time of the Governor-General's arrival, however, being still ambiguous, Kim proceeded to Pyong-yang with some of his men that night to obtain further news.

"The Syen Chuen men—now accused—thought that in view of the praise bestowed upon them by Kim Kwi it would

be a disgrace on their part if they were forestalled by any other party of men in executing the plot. They also thought it was necessary to keep the students determined to realise their ambition, and so they held meetings of students almost every evening in the No. 8 class-room, and urged them by various means to carry out the plot with decision. The accused Kwak Tai-chong, Chang Si-ok, and Syong Oo-hyok, selected the boys of the most fearless and daring character from the student body, and armed them with revolvers when going down to the station.

"About November 25th the members from Kwaksan—Yi Keun-taik, O Hak-su, Chi Sang-chu, and Kim Si-cham—came to Syen Chuen to help the local members in compliance with instructions from Yang Chom miung, requesting them to do so. Kim Kwi and party, who had been to Pyong-yang, got reliable intelligence that the Governor-General was to leave Seoul for the New Wiju districts on the 27th. Accordingly, he left Pyong-yang with An Tai-kuk and party, numbering more than 10 men in all, and in separate parties they went back to Syen Chuen on different occasions. A meeting was held in No. 8 class-room at the mission school on the evening of their arrival, and Kim Kwi addressed the assemblage, urging that the plot against the Governor-General must be executed in any circumstances, as it was by order of Baron Yun Chi-ho and Yang Ki-tak. Inflammatory speeches were also delivered by certain other leading men to excite and stimulate the people, and after an announcement that the party would be given revolvers the next day, the meeting concluded. The following day (November 27th) the party again met at the mission school, and in class-room No. 7 revolvers were distributed among the students and others who did not possess weapons. Preparations for carrying out the plot were thus completely made.

#### THE CONSPIRATORS FROM NAP CHYONGJONG.

"I believe it is now necessary to refer to the arrangements made by those of the accused from Nap Chyongjong. This place may be regarded as the base of operations of the accused Yi Seung-hun. It is close to his birthplace, and he was also closely connected with it in certain other ways. Yi founded schools there, and used to inspire anti-Japanese ideas

in the minds of the local people. In 1908, at the Sinheung school, he delivered excited speeches on national affairs, instigating the people to assassinate the "Five Traitors" and "Seven Betrayers," and to start a war of independence when an opportunity was presented. Accused sent young men like Im Hyong-wha to Tokyo under the pretext of study, but in reality to observe political conditions in Japan. Yi subsequently closed the Sinheung school and the Osam school, and established the Kamlung school at Nap Chyongjong. He appointed Yi Yong-wha as managing director, Im Hyong-wha as head teacher, and Yi Tai-kyong, Choi Syong-min, and certain others as teachers, while on the other hand he got into close relations with influential Christian pastors in the district like Cho Tok-chan. He exerted himself to develop the influence of the New People's Society, and to propagate the anti-Japanese spirit in the minds of the local people. Yi's efforts resulted in the production from his school at Kamlung of men of dangerous thoughts like Kim Syonghaing, La Seung-kiu, and An Syong-che who would go through fire and water for the cause of the Society. At the time of the attack on Count Yi Wang-yong, Yi sent the accused Kim Chan-o and Choi Chu-sik, whom he had specially selected, to assist in the dangerous enterprise. Yi devoted himself almost entirely to the work of the New People's Society, and the members at Nap Chyongjong did just what he wanted.

In regard to the conferences in Seoul of the accused Yi Seung-hun with Baron Yun Chi-ho and other leaders of the movement over the plot for the assassination of the Governor-General, Yi used to go to Nap Chyongjong after each conference to give an account of what had transpired to the local members, and he also used to repeatedly urge them to carry out the plot. On or about August 20th, September 15th, and October 20th, the conspirators at Nap Chyongjong went to the railway-station at Chyongju with the object of assassinating the Governor-General, but the Governor-General did not arrive as expected, and as had been reported by Yi Seung-hun in circumstances already referred to. This point was not made clear by the examination of the accused from Nap Chyongjong in regard to their movements, and there is no direct evidence to prove

it. But, according to the statements of the accused from this place, these men said that Yi Seung-hun went to Nap Chyongjong in August, September, and October, 1910, to collect funds for the construction of a military school. It was then that Yi Tai-hyon, Im Hyong-wha, and Yi Chung-yong instigated the hot-blooded youths La Seung-kiu, Kim Syong-haing, An Syong-che, and Kim Chan-o to commit armed burglary in order to obtain funds for the Society. Further, in the confession of La Seung-kiu, this man says that he went to the station at Chyongju several times to carry out the plot, but on each occasion the Governor-General failed to arrive. If all these statements be taken into consideration, together with the relation of the movements of the members at Pyong-yang and Syen Chuen, the evidence is sufficient to justify the belief that the facts are as I have stated.

#### NEWS OF THE GOVERNOR'S MOVEMENTS.

About the middle of November an authoritative message was received in Nap Chyongjong that the Governor-General was shortly starting for his tour to the western provinces. It was also said that Baron Yun and other leaders, as a result of several conferences, had decided to exert their best efforts to execute the plot at the railway-station at Syen Chuen. The accused Im Hyong-wha and Yi Yong-wha began to collect revolvers for the purpose, while other members committed burglaries to obtain funds for the proposed military school and also for the conspiracy. Owing to the position of the parties at Pyong-yang and Syen Chuen not being quite clear, the party at Nap Chyongjong thought it advisable to send Kim Syong-haing, La Seung-kiu, and An Syong-che to keep up the relations between the local bodies. This was done, and all were in readiness for a good opportunity for executing the plot.

Meanwhile Yi Seung-hun, after consultations at Seoul and Pyong-yang over the plot, proceeded to Nap Chyongjong about November 25th, accompanied by Kim Syong-haing and others. Upon arrival there they met the local members of the Society at the Kamlung school, and told them about the conferences at Seoul with Baron Yun and other leaders. Yi then disclosed the fact that the Governor-General was leaving the capital



for New Wiju, and submitted the proposal to carry out the assassination at Syen Chuen station in co-operation with the local members of the Society. His proposal was adopted, and small parties of men started from Nap Chyongjong that very day and up to the morning of the 27th. They went at different times, and in different parties, but all carried revolvers or swords. Yi Senng-hun went to Syen Chuen on November 27th via Chyongju with his own party and a group of Chyongju members, including Hong Song-in and Choi Syong-chu.

#### THE "VERY OBSTINATE MEMBER."

"It is now necessary to review the movements of the accused belonging to the Chyongju group. Choi Syong-chu was the head teacher of the Sin-an school, Chyongju, and was a notorious man of anti-Japanese sentiment. *He was the very obstinate member of the Society who, at a meeting on the first anniversary of the birthday of the Emperor of Japan after the annexation of Korea, refused to bow before the Imperial picture on the ground that such an act was worshipping an image.* The accused Hong Song-in was once the chairman of the Chyongju branch of the Syepuk Society, formed by men of anti-Japanese ideas, and he was regarded as an influential man in the district. Yi Miung-yong, Im Do-myong, and Paik Mong-kiu were in their turn the leading members of the Society in Chyongju. About the middle of August 1910, Ok Kwan-pin came to Chyongju with Im Hyong-wha, with details of the scheme for assassinating the Governor-General originated by Baron Yun and others in Seoul. The Chyongju men fell in with the plan, and when they got the reports from Yang Chom-miung on August 20th, September 15th, and October 20th, 1910, they all turned out at the railway-station at Chyongju, armed with pistols, ready to assassinate the Governor-General, who, however, did not arrive as expected.

"About the middle of November Hong Song-in, Paik Mong-kiu, Im Do-myong, and some others of the accused went to Syen Chuen as a result of a communication from the party at that place. Upon arrival at Syen Chuen they met Ok Kwan-pin and the local members at Yang Chom-miung's house, and took an oath that they would carry out the assassination of

the Governor-General at the railway station in Syen Chuen when he stopped there on his way north. They subsequently returned to Chyongju, where they discussed the matter with the other members of the Society. They also exerted themselves to collect dangerous weapons and were anxiously awaiting the General's visit. On November 27th Yi Senng-hun dropped in at Chyongju on his way from Nap Chyongjong to Syen Chuen, with the information that the Governor-General was starting from Seoul on his trip. The accused Choi Syong-chu and a number of other interested men, about 10 in all, accordingly proceeded at once to Syen Chuen.

"I here propose to touch upon the evidence produced by one of the counsel for the defence in regard to the number of passengers travelling between certain points on November 27th.

#### THE RAILWAY OFFICIAL'S EVIDENCE.

"Mr. Okubo produced as an exhibit a telegram from the station-master at Chyongju. [This message, sent in reply to an inquiry made by counsel, stated that on the day in question 9 passengers travelled from Chyongju to Syen Chuen by rail.] Later on it became evident that this message was inaccurate, owing to a mistake on the part of the railway official. At the same time, it is not unlikely that the accused from Nap Chyongjong and Chyongju—numbering 30 men in all—did not go down to Syen Chuen by rail that day. But when we consider the fact that Kim Syong-haing, La Seung-kin, and An Syong-che had been preparing for the plot for some time, travelling up and down the line between Pyong-yang and Syen Chuen, it is not difficult to assume that some of the men may have proceeded to Syen Chuen a few days previous to the day on which the attack was to be made. Further, the distance between Nap Chyongjong and Syen Chuen is about 11 ri, and there is no reason why we should not conclude that most of the accused went to Syen Chuen on foot in order to avoid attracting official attention. Thus, even admitting that the number of passengers from Chyongju to Syen Chuen on the day in question was less than the number of the accused concerned, this does not prove that the men from Nap Chyongjong and Chyongju now charged were not concerned in the conspiracy.

#### THE INCIDENT AT SYEN CHUEN STATION.

"As I have already mentioned, the members of the New People's Society in all the surrounding districts arrived at Syen Chuen at about 3 p.m. on November 27th, 1919. By this time, the men at Syen Chuen were all ready for action, all the revolvers having been distributed among them. All the conspirators assembled in the No. 8 class-room of the mission school to finally discuss their plans. Although it was definitely known that the Governor-General was coming on that evening, it was still uncertain whether he would alight from his car or not. Consequently only a portion of party, armed with revolvers, went to the railway-station and awaited the arrival of the Governor-General's train outside the building. The train entered the station at about 6.18 p.m. but the General did not alight from his car, and the train started for New Wiju about seven minutes later.

"The conspirators then held a meeting at the mission school, when Yi Seung-hun declared that the assassination of the Governor-General was the order of Baron Yun Chi-ho and Yang Kik-tak, the representative voices of the 13 provinces of Korea. The plot must be carried out, he went on, at the risk of the lives of the members of the whole Society. The General would alight from his car the following day, continued Yi, so that this good opportunity for executing the assassination should not be missed. All present swore that they would carry out their mission with decision and bravery.

"Seeing that the Governor-General had not left his car at Syen Chuen, Yi Seung-hun thought that Count Terauchi might not alight from his car on the return trip, and he thought the best thing to do was to distribute the conspirators at Chyongju, Kwaksan, and some other principal stations, so that they might be able to execute the plot in one place even if it failed in another. The accused Choi Syong-chu was accordingly ordered to go to Chyongju, accompanied by Yi Kenn-taik, Chi Sang-chu, O Hak-su, Im Do-myong, Paik Mong-kin, and Yi Myong-yong. The accused Hong Song-in was sent to Kwaksan with Kim Siham and others. All these men had instructions to kill the Governor-General if he stopped at these places. The men proceeded to their respective places, all armed with revolvers and other dangerous weapons,

at about 9 p.m. the following day (November 28th). Those who were to attack the Governor-General at Syen Chuen station met again in the No. 7 class-room at the mission school, and distributed revolvers among those students who had been chosen on account of their being brave youths. This was done in the presence of Yang Chom-miung, Syon Oo-kyok, Kwok Tai-chong, and Kim Il-chom. Revolvers and swords were also given to the teachers and others. These weapons were concealed under their robes. Some young men who were not students were allowed to enter the files of students, wearing school caps and robes. They were led to the station by the accused Sin Hyo-pyom, with the teachers in front and behind the rows. They formed in lines on the platform, the teachers and others standing at the head of the files of youths, or before or behind. In this order the party awaited the coming of the Governor-General.

#### THE GOVERNOR'S RETURN JOURNEY.

"The special train reached the station at about 12.33 p.m. The Governor-General got out of his car, and walked along the files of the students, saluting as he walked along, and then went back to his car. The accused wanted to make an attack on the General as he passed close in front of them, but were unable to do so, partly owing to the strict guard which was maintained, and partly owing to their lack of determination.

"The accused—including Hong Song-in and Kim Siham—who went from Syen Chuen to Kwaksan by order of Yi Seung-hun, went to the railway-station at Kwaksan with revolvers hidden under their clothes, and awaited the arrival of the Governor-General's train, which entered the station at about 1 p.m. on November 28th, 1919. The train, however, did not stop, merely slackening speed as it passed through, and so the accused could not carry out their scheme.

"The party including Choi Syong-chu—which went to Chyongju assembled at the Sin-an school, and after consulting the local members of the New Peoples' Society proceeded to the railway station. They were accompanied by a number of students from the school mentioned, with themselves either at the head or the end of the files. All were armed with revolvers. They went on to the platform pretending to be innocent people wishing to welcome the Governor.

The train arrived at about 1.25 p.m., and the Governor-General got out of his car to salute the people present, but the accused could not assassinate him on account of the strict guard which was kept.

#### THE MOVEMENTS OF THE CHUL SAN GROUP.

"Let me now review the movements of the accused O Heui-won and three others at Chul San. O Heui-won was a wealthy man at Chul San, and was once Governor of the district. He had the surname of O Yong-chuen, which was notorious in connection with the anti-Japanese movement in that quarter. He gave Y3,000 towards the building fund of the Taisong school, and was a shareholder in the Chong Chi-chom, Yi Seung-hun's general office at Syen Chuen. Thus he did very much for the cause of the New People's Society, and was the leader of the party at Chul San. The accused Chyong Won-pyong and Lyu Hok-lium were also leading figures in that district.

"About the middle of August 1910, Yi Yong-hyok of Syen Chuen went to O Heui-won's house as the messenger of Yang Chom-miung, and told Yi to send some representatives of the local party to Syen Chuen to attend conferences in connection with the plot which were being held there during the visit of Ok Kwan-pin from Seoul. As a result of consultation with the principal leaders at Chul San, the accused O Heui-won, Chang Wan-pyong, and two others were sent to Syen Chuen, where they attended the meetings, and swore that they and their party would carry out the assassination. Upon returning to Chul San, Chang received Y400 from O, and together with Choi Tak-yun, of Syen Chuen, proceeded to Antung, where he purchased 20 revolvers. Later on, about August 20th and September 15th, Cha Kiun-sul and Yi Yong-hyok went to Chul San as messengers of Yi Seung-hun, with news of the expected coming of the Governor-General. The accused from this place, armed with revolvers, went to the station at Charyon-kwan on the days mentioned, but the Governor-General did not arrive.

"About the middle of November Cha Kiun-sul, of Syen Chuen, went to Chul San and told the local members that Ok Kwan-pin was at Syen Chuen talking over the conspiracy with the members there. Four Chul San members, with a volunteer, Kim Tai-keun, proceeded to Syen Chuen, but arrived too late to attend the meeting at Yang Chom-miung's general office.

They attended a meeting, however, held in the private residence of Yang, and having seconded the proposed plans, returned to Chul San. Kim Tai-keun returned from Syen Chuen on November 26th, bringing news that the Governor-General was leaving Seoul for New Wiju the following day.

"The accused men assembled at O Heui-won's house and agreed to meet at the railway station at Charyon-kwan by about 2 p.m. next day (November 27th). When they went down to the station, all carrying revolvers, they were not allowed to go on the platform, and were obliged to await the arrival of the Governor-General's train near the wicket. The train arrived about 6.55 p.m., but stopped for only about a minute. The accused were therefore unable to carry out their plans. They then assembled on a small hill near the station to discuss what steps should next be taken. They agreed that they should go to New Wiju and work in co-operation with their fellow-members there. It was, however, agreed that the accused Chang Kwan-san should stay and kill the General on his return trip, if an opportunity offered itself. The accused O, Lyu, and Chang went to New Wiju by rail that evening. On the following day (November 28th) Chang Kwan-san proceeded to the railway station at Charyon-kwan with other members of the party. With revolvers concealed under their robes they walked on to the platform as though they were innocent people waiting to welcome the Governor-General. The train arrived at about 12.04, but started again after stopping only for about a minute. Once again the conspirators had to turn back without having had a chance to attack the Governor-General.

#### ANALYSIS OF CAREER OF ACCUSED.

"The accused Yi Keui-tang was an influential member of the New Peoples' Society in Yong Chuen, Wiju, and adjacent districts. The accused Kim Changkyon was the managing director of the Yang-sil School, Wiju. He became a Christian when a young man, later on becoming a pastor. He used to inspire the school students and local people with anti-Japanese ideas. The accused An Kwon-ho and Song Cha-hyong were also leading members of the Society in Yong Chuen. About August 1910, Ok Kwan-pin and Im Hyeong-wha went to Wiju via Syen Chuen, and

Informed the members of the party there of the conference they had had at Seoul with Baron Yun Chi-ho and Yang Ki-tak. They also proposed that the Wiju men should assist in executing the plot in co-operation with the members at Yong Chuen. The accused Yi Keui-tang, Paik Yong-sak and Kim Chang-keun endorsed the proposal, and together with the Yong Chuen members An Kwong-ho and Song Cha-hyong purchased revolvers from China, collected funds of the foundation of the proposed military school in Chientao. Upon getting information on September 15th and October 20th of the coming of the Governor-General, they went to New Wiju, taking revolvers with them. The Governor-General, however, did not come. Later Yi Keui-tang fell ill and went to Chon Hsin-chik, a doctor at Syen Chuen, where he stayed for medical treatment. About the middle of November Yi Yong-hyok came to the doctor's house as a messenger from Yang Chom-ming to confer with the doctor about the projected assassination. The doctor then went to Syen Chuen with his patient, Yi Keui-tang. As already stated, Ok Kwan-pin, Kil Chin-hyong, and others were then assembled at Yang's general office, and were discussing the conspiracy. The accused Yi strongly supported the proposed plans, and next day went to Wiju with Ok Kwan-pin, in spite of his illness. At Kim Choon-keun's house they met the accused Paik Yong-sak and Kim Chang-kyon and about 10 others, and telling them of the conference at Syen Chuen they had just attended, demanded the approval of the local members. Yi and Ok further proposed that the party should act with the men from Yong Chuen. There were some among the Wiju men who said that it was doubtful whether the men at Yong Chuen would join them, as the Yong Chuen men had so often had journeys for nothing as the result of inaccurate reports received from the Wiju men about expected visits of the Governor-General. Eventually Ok was instructed to discuss the matter directly with the members at Yong Chuen.

The following day Yi and Ok called Song Cha-hyong, An Kwong-ho, and a few others to Wiju from Yong Chuen. They all met at the Yangsil school, together with several scores of teachers and students of the school. Yi and Ok delivered inflammatory speeches urging the assassination of the Governor-General,

and on the conclusion of the meeting about 46 of the leading members met secretly, and Ok urged that no matter how many times they might fail to carry out the plot, they should not be disappointed, but with dauntless determination should persevere in the attempt to execute their mission. The plot was ordered by Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak, and this order had been accepted by the men at Pyong-yang and Syen Chuen, where a programme had been prepared, and the men were getting ready to execute the plan. Yi and Ok said all this to strengthen the minds of the hearers.

"They further thought it necessary to keep pace with the members at Syen Chuen in preparing to carry out the conspiracy, and so about October 19th Yi Keui-tang and Kim Chang-keun, together with Ok Kwan-pin, proceeded to Syen Chuen, while Song Cha-hyong and An Kwong-ho went back to Yong Chuen to prepare for the attempt on the Governor-General.

"The leaders who had gone to Syen Chuen—including Yi Keui-tang—travelled up and down between that place and Wiju making preparations. About October 24th Yi Keui-tang came to Wiju, and gathering those interested in the plot and the students of the Yangsil School together reported the plans which had been made at Syen Chuen. He also said that the exact date of the Governor-General's arrival would be made known later, and when he came they should carry out their plans with the utmost care and determination.

"Later a report was received at Wiju that the Governor-General was leaving Seoul on the 27th and would arrive at New Wiju the same day. The conspirators again assembled at the Yangsil school on the night of the 26th, when Yi Keui-tang and Ok informed them that Count Terauchi was due there the following day, and urged them not to fail to effect his assassination. The meeting broke up after the leaders had instructed the others to meet at the school next morning. The following morning, all the conspirators assembled at the school, and revolvers were distributed to them in the presence of Yi Keui-tang and Kim Chang-keun, before these two led the party to New Wiju.

"An Kwong-ho and Song Cha-hyong, accompanying the students from the school at Yong Chuen, were already in New Wiju, and the two parties of men, all armed with revolvers, joined forces and

proceeded to the railway-station. They scattered themselves in front of the station and awaited the arrival of the Governor-General. About 8.30 p.m. the train arrived, but for some reason the Governor did not leave the train all night. The accused, therefore, could not do anything, and decided to return the following day. The leaders of the party put up for the night at the house of Pak Pong-yup and elsewhere.

"The same night O Heui-won, Chang Wan-pyong, and Lyu Hak-hum, who had followed the train from Chul San, called at Pak's house. The other leaders were summoned to Pak's house to discuss what steps should be taken in the unexpected circumstances which had arisen. A proposal was made that the conspirators should keep a close watch on the Governor-General's train all night, in the hope that a good chance might offer itself to make an attack upon him. This suggestion was unanimously adopted, and at about midnight a party of men went out armed with revolvers, and walked round the train at some distance. They attempted to get nearer, but were unable to do so, owing to the strict guard which was kept. After a fruitless wait they withdrew from the station. Soon after daylight they went back to the station, placing themselves as before in front of the building. The Governor-General left the train at about 8 a.m., and drove into the town to make a tour of inspection round the Government offices. He came back to the station about two hours later. The accused again decided to make an effort to execute their plans, but again were frustrated by the strict guard.

"I shall next deal with the circumstances of the offences committed by Lyu Tong-sol. The accused organised the New People's Society, together with An Chang-ho, Baron Yun, Yi Seung-hun, and Yang Ki-tak. He was one of the leaders. In December 1910 (new calendar), he was proceeded against by the police for violation of the Peace Preservation Law. At this time the annexation of Korea had not been effected by Japan for more than a couple of months, and a general amnesty was proclaimed throughout the peninsula. Lyu was favoured with special treatment, his offence being given special consideration. He was released from the charge after an admonition from the Procurator, when he (accused) took an oath that he would be very careful about his words

and behaviour in future. Despite this pledge, the accused interested himself in the New People's Society, and got into touch with Baron Yun, Yang Ki-tak, and Im Chi-chong. In July 1911, Yang Chom-miung and Yi Yong-wha, as messengers of Baron Yun, called upon Lyu, who urged them to exert themselves for the development of the Society, and to take up the management of the Society's affairs in North Pyongan-do during the absence of Yi Seung-hun. Later, the accused Lyu learned that the Governor-General was going to attend the opening ceremony of the Yalu bridge, and he planned the assassination of the Governor-General at the hands of the members of the Society in North Pyongan-do. Under the pretext of obtaining promoters for a new industrial company, the accused first proceeded to Pyong-yang, staying there at the house of Yun Syong-un. Lyu gathered the local members of the Society at the Taikuk book-store and the Taisong school, and urged that they should kill the Governor-General when he passed through on his way to the Yalu bridge. The suggestion was approved by the Pyong-yang members, whereupon Lyu went on to Anju, where he discussed the plot with a local member, An Syek. Lyu then proceeded to New Wiju, where he put up at a hotel managed by one Kim. Lyu invited the accused Yi Keui-tang to the hotel, and expressed his regret that the scheme for the establishment of a military school, which was one of the objects of the Society, was not progressing as well as he wished. At the same time he urged Yi to assassinate the Governor-General. Lyu then visited Wiju, staying at a hotel kept by Yi Yong-chin. Here he met Paik Yong-sok, Kim Chang-kyon, and others, and persuaded them to join the plot. Lyu next returned to New Wiju and again invited Yi Keui-tang to Kim's hotel, where he described the result of his conference with the men in Wiju. Lyu then made his way to Chul San, passing the night at O Heui-won's house, where he met the local members of the New people's Society and explained the plot to them. He then went over to Syen Chuen, where he met the local members at Yi Seung-hun's general office and the mission school and further discussed the plot. Then he went once more to Pyong-yang to report on what had been arranged at the various places he had been to, and then returned to Seoul. It was as a result of

Lyu's activity in canvassing that the members of the New People's Society prepared to assassinate the Governor-General when an opportunity offered itself.

"I may also mention the fact that it was through Lyu's canvassing that a certain number of men contemplated an attack on Count Terauchi at the railway stations at Pyong-yang and Charyon-kwan as he passed these places on his way to the Yalu bridge. This fact, however, is not included in the present indictment, and so I shall not refer to it further, but will go on with the accused's movements at New Wiju.

#### PROSECUTOR'S SUMMING UP.

"While the members of the Society at Wiju and New Wiju—including Yi Keui-tang—were holding a conference at the Yangsil school on October 28th, 1910, a number of men from Pyong-yang—Kim Keung-yung, Sye Ki-poong, and a few others—came to assist them at the instruction of Lyu Tong-sol, who meant to concentrate the strength of the party at New Wiju, as the Governor-General was expected there on October 30th. On the 29th Kim Ik-kyon, Yi Pong-cho, and Chang Si-ook came from Syen Chuen to help at New Wiju, as the attempt at Syen Chuen the previous year had been detected, and it was impossible to repeat the attempt at Syen Chuen station. These men assembled at the Yangsil school to discuss their plans, and on the 31st, all armed with revolvers, they went to New Wiju station, and met the men from Yong Chuen. They appointed Kim Keung-yung in command of the party, and disbanded for the time being, they then proceeding to the station individually at about 2 p.m. They then found that it was impossible to take up their positions as projected, owing to the presence of a large number of soldiers, so they went to the old railway station, where they scattered themselves about along one side of the building. The Governor-General arrived after dusk, and as he came out of the station Yi Keui-tang tried to draw near, but was unable to do so owing to the soldiers and gendarmes. The conspirators again met in the fields, and decided to make another attempt to assassinate Count Terauchi the following day (November 1st) when he went to the place of ceremony. They then disbanded, but the leaders gathered at Pak Pong-wha's house, where

they met Choi Tok-yun, Lyu Hak-liun, and O Heui-won, who had come in pursuit of the Governor's train from Chul San. A number of these men wandered about the streets of New Wiju during the night, in the hope of finding a chance to make an attack upon Count Terauchi, but without success. Next morning (November 1st), at about 8 o'clock, they went to the new station and scattered themselves in front of the building to await the coming of the Governor-General. He subsequently came and entered the station on the opposite side to where they were standing. When the Governor-General came out of the place where the opening ceremony was to be held, the accused Yi Keui-tang and other members several times wanted to attack him, but were unable to get near owing to the soldiers present. On the following day, when the Governor-General left New Wiju, they again arranged to attack him at the new railway station, but were again unsuccessful owing to the strict guard maintained.

"As I have shown in the course of my review of this case, all the accused were members of the New People's Society. Their objects were to assassinate various high officials, including the Governor-General, and—when Japan was engaged in war with China or America—to hoist the flag of independence and establish a Republic. Their schemes have been frustrated, and I sincerely hope that they will not resort to making cowardly and effeminate excuses, and thus lose any public sympathy there may be for them. They should confess their crime openly like men, here in open Court, and thus throw themselves upon the clemency of the Court. And I hope that in future they will become good and faithful subjects of the Japanese Government."

#### CHIEF PROSECUTOR'S DEMAND FOR PENALTIES.

After Procurator Sakai had completed his lengthy speech, the Chief Procurator (Mr. Matsudera) addressed the Court, and set forth the law applying to the case, which he declared to be one of unconsummated murder. In conclusion he demanded a sentence of 10 years' penal servitude on 6 of the prisoners, these being Baron Yun Chi-ho, Yi Seung-hun, Yang Ki-tak, Im Chi-chong, An Tai-kuk, and Lyu Tong-sol. Eight years' imprisonment on 21 of the ac-

cused, including Ok Kwanpin, Im Hyong-wha, and Yang Chom-miung. Six years imprisonment on 42, including Kim Il-chom and Hong Songik. Five years' imprisonment on 54, including Kil Chin-hyong, Cho Mun-paik, and Kang Pong-oo.

## THE SIXTEENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### THE CASE FOR THE DEFENCE.

#### SPEECH BY COUNSEL.

SEOUL, August 26.

Saturday's proceedings came to a conclusion with the termination of the Procurator's lengthy speech reviewing the "facts" of the case and the Chief Procurator's speech as to the application of law in the present case. To day (Monday) the first of the speeches for the defence was heard, and in anticipation of some interesting proceedings, there were more spectators than usual, quite a large number of foreigners being present including about a dozen ladies. The official seats behind the Judges were also well filled, and I noticed that Dr. Kruger, the German Consul-General, was watching the proceedings from a seat on the left-hand side of the dais.

There is one feature about the appearance of the Koreans who are daily seen in the public part of the Court which I have not previously mentioned—that is, that practically all the men one sees in Court have had the old-fashioned top-knots cut off, while the women, or most of them, have their hair done up in a style something like European fashion, instead of the old Korean style. It was about ten o'clock when the proceedings were commenced, and the opening speech for the defence was begun by Mr. Miyake, who was formerly a Judge in the Seoul Court, but who is now practising as a barrister.

#### MR. MIYAKE'S SPEECH IN DEFENCE.

"In dealing with this case," said Mr. Miyake, "I propose to deal with the points of the case in the same order as they have been dealt with by the Procurator, but before doing so I shall deal with certain matters which affect all the accused collectively—I refer to their confessions. Now the confession of an accused man may be the most convincing

evidence one can have, but it may also be the most doubtful evidence. When a man's confession agrees exactly with the facts of the case against him, judgement may properly be delivered solely upon the strength of his confession. When, however, a confession does not agree with the facts of the case, it becomes a very dangerous piece of evidence. The Chief Procurator has said that the confessions of accused should be accepted as evidence because they were the voluntary statements of accused, made in reply to questions addressed to them by the Procurator who made the preliminary examination into the facts of the case. I have my own opinion as to whether these statements were voluntary or not.

#### THE FALSE CONFESSIONS.

"As a result of my own observations, I have come to the conclusion that most Koreans have the faculty of reading other people's minds. They can understand another person's thoughts after talking with him for about half an hour, and will then try to talk in such a way as they think will please the other. In this the Japanese are no match for them. In the present case it is certainly true that some of the accused understood what their questioners—the police and the Procurator—had in mind in examining them, and thought that they would please their examiners by making the answers which they thought were expected from them, whether true or untrue. The officials conducting the examination thought these replies were authentic statements of fact, and were thus led into a bewildering maze of confessions. I ask the Court, what were the confessions of Pak Nah-hyo and Chang Pil-sok? Did not they confess that they were accomplices in this alleged conspiracy, and had gone to the railway-station armed with revolvers with the intention of killing the Governor-General? But, as a matter of fact, the Procurator—as a result of further investigation—found that on the day in question these two were under arrest at certain gendarmerie stations, and could not possibly have gone to the station as they confessed they did; therefore they were acquitted. This is a striking example of the loose and random manner of talking adopted in replying to questions by the authorities. The Procurator says that the confessions of the accused are to be accepted because they correspond with the

facts of the case, but it is evident that we must first ascertain whether these confessions do correspond with the facts before they are adopted in deciding this case.

#### JUSTIFICATION OF KOREAN INDIGNATION.

"I shall now deal with the position of the New People's Society. This organisation has as its object the encouragement of education and industry in Korea. It was founded before Japan declared Korea to be a Japanese Protectorate. It is generally admitted that a very great defect in Korea is the absence of education and of organised industry, and these facts being recognised by those who are called 'men of the country' or patriotic men, they organised the New People's Society with the object of making good these defects. The scheme was not a selfish one, for any one man's own interest or benefit; it was something quite different. It is certainly true the majority of the members changed their views about the country's future when that great national crisis, the annexation, came about. The statements made by the accused in open Court that they had no particular feelings at the time the annexation was declared is probably not true. It is only natural that they should be distressed at the thought of the downfall of a dynasty which had lasted for about 500 years. To have such feelings, however, does not necessarily indicate a desire to take action to resist annexation. There were some Koreans who exerted themselves to bring about the surrender of their country's national rights to Japan, while others were grateful to Japan for what she had done. But even these people had some natural feelings of regret at the change which took place, just as men could not easily forget the gratitude owing to an old master. There may have been some men who were so overwhelmed with the sense of misfortune at what they considered was the ruin of their country that they entertained dangerous thoughts against Japan, but even so, it was only proper that as Koreans they should have such thoughts.

"It can be easily understood that a political change like the annexation of Korea would seem to offer to those unacquainted with the general trend of political affairs an opportunity to undertake a decisive scheme to oppose the new régime. For example, at the time of the annexation the Korean papers urged

the assassination of the Ministers known as the 'Five Traitors' and the 'Seven Betrayers.' Moreover, the assassination of Prince Ito and Mr. Stevens, and the attack made upon Count Yi, the former Korean Premier, were the forcible demonstrations of this spirit of opposition. Such ideas, however, are not peculiar to members of the New People's Society, but I believe are general among those who feel very strongly upon their national affairs. It is reasonable to suppose that some of the members of this Society brooded in much the same way over the change that took place, and even had dangerous thoughts against certain Japanese of high rank, but it cannot be said that it was because they were members of the Society that they had these ideas. Every man who thought over the position of his country might quite naturally have such thoughts. It is a fact that the majority of the accused are members of the New People's Society but it would be quite improper to assume that they all held dangerous thoughts against the Japanese authorities merely because they belonged to the Society.

"When we come to consider the facts, it seems to me that if the Koreans really had the intention of killing the Governor-General, there was no necessity for them to invite tens of thousands of men to join the movement, as the Procurator has said belonged to it. The collecting of an enormous membership would be no good for the Society,—in fact, it would be rather detrimental to the carrying-out of its alleged object of assassination. Therefore, I submit that it is right and proper to conclude that the New People's Society had for its object the encouragement of education and industry in the peninsula, and the only question which has now to be considered is whether the accused, members of this Society, had the dangerous thoughts attributed to them or not.

"The majority of the accused are religious men,—men of morals, but not men of politics. Moreover, many of them are Christians, and not likely to assassinate a man, and thus violate one of the Ten Commandments. I can prove this point by personal evidence, including that of foreigners, who doubt most strongly the possibility of these men doing such an act. Therefore I cannot believe that the accused are guilty of plotting the assassination of the Governor-General unless some very strong and conclusive proof is produced to substantiate the charge.



Among the accused there are quite a number of the national religion. Their friends assure me that these men are quite innocent of the charge which has been brought against them.

"I am of opinion that if the jury system was in force in Japanese Courts, the men who are now accused would not have been brought up for trial. During the proceedings in Court I noticed some of the accused sitting perfectly calm and resigned, a fact which I think the Judges also observed. I could see by their demeanour whether they had made true or false statements; there is no reason why one man of sincere mind cannot understand another, and I am sure that the Judges too were convinced as to whether the statements made by the accused in Court were true or not. I feel confident that the Court will carefully examine the statements and confessions of the accused and compare them with the exhibits of documentary and personal evidence, resolved to punish the accused if they are guilty of the crime charged against them, and to acquit them if it is found that they are innocent.

"The idea that the Japanese nation is one which is always guided by righteousness is believed to be true by the Japanese people themselves, and is admitted by other nationals. The present case is nothing more than a natural explosion of remonstrance against the Japanese in bringing about the ruin of the Han dynasty after an existence of 500 years. In doing this the Koreans acted according to their ideas of righteousness.

"As a matter of course, the Court will enter solemn and dignified judgement in this case, but I would like to urge the Court to exercise keen discrimination between the men who are to be punished and those who should be acquitted with sympathy and justice. Such a judgement would represent the Japanese mind—to proceed in accordance with righteousness. This is desirable not only for the good name of Japan, but for the cause of humanity.

"I should now refer to the circumstances of the alleged crimes with which the accused are charged, but I am compelled to stop my speech for a time in order to give place to Mr. Ogawa, who has come down from Tokyo to address the Court. I shall have the honour of resuming my address to the Court later."

#### MR. OGAWA'S SPEECH.

Mr. Ogawa spoke at very great length, the following being a translation of the speech:—

"In the case now before the Court there are 123 Koreans concerned in a charge of having taken certain action against the Japanese authorities in Korea. Among the accused there are a fair number of youths who are students at a certain school which is under the management of a foreigner, and this fact had attracted attention all the world over. The Court has accordingly examined the evidence in this case very carefully. But we barristers who are defending the accused had to take the extreme measure of appealing for a change of Judges, on the ground that the Court was not impartial. We did this simply because we considered the step advisable in the interests of our clients, and wished to do all we could in their behalf. Our protest, however, was dismissed by two Courts, a fact which compels us to assume that the Court is impartial, and we now await the judgement of the Court.

#### PECULIARITIES OF KOREAN CHARACTERISTICS

"Before proceeding to deal directly with this case, I should first of all like to remind the Court that the customs, manners, and dispositions of the Koreans differ in many respects from those of the Japanese. I have been told by Mr. Miyake, who is also appearing with me for the defence, and is an old resident in Korea, that even for those who have lived a long time in the peninsula it is impossible to understand certain customs and peculiarities of disposition among the Koreans. It is therefore difficult to gather the real story of this case from the records—extremely complicated—of the statements made by the accused. It is a matter for congratulation, however, that the Judges in charge of this case are well acquainted with Korean conditions and peculiarities, and I am sure will detect the real facts of the case. I merely wish to point out that a great and serious blunder may be made in deciding this case if the peculiarities which I have mentioned are not fully taken into account.

#### THE NEW PEOPLE'S SOCIETY.

"Turning now to a general review of this case. Most of the prisoners charged with being concerned in this alleged conspiracy are members of the New People's

Society. It seems to me that among the members of this Society were some who, after brooding over various ideas of revenge, resorted to illegal acts; this seems indisputable. It is erroneous to think, however, as some people do, that the New People's Society is an organisation worked on any such principles. This Society, as far as my investigation goes, was not a strong body, nor was its policy and administration under the control of a few individual members, as has been alleged. It is wrong to conclude that the crime of which the prisoners are accused was the result of any party organisation. In other words, the leader or leaders of the party did not propose the crime with which they are charged nor did the members of the Society carry out the said scheme. This point, I think it is hardly necessary to deal with at any length, as it is already clear to the Court, but at the same time I should like to devote a few words to the point.

#### NATURAL KOREAN INDIGNATION.

"The New People's Society, in my opinion, is not a systematically organised body. It is quite a superficial idea to suppose that the Society was founded on certain definite principles, and that the present plot was founded by Baron Yun and Yang Ki-tak. It was not the result of the ideas of a few persons holding anti-Japanese views, nor was it instigated and organised by such persons. It was merely a natural political phenomenon arising out of the changed national condition of Korea as a result of the annexation by Japan, following closely upon the protectorate declared over the country. It was a demonstration of the rash and wild ideas held by those who are not fully acquainted with the real situation of the world's affairs—an eruption of conservative thoughts of ignorant people which took place when they realised the downfall of the Han dynasty. Such phenomena are not peculiar to Korea, but are quite common all over the world in similar circumstances. Such affairs, however, are not the result of instigation by a few people, but are the result of an outburst of strong conservative feeling. The present conspiracy case is an affair of this kind, where men of conservative opinions, opposed to any change, have unconsciously come together as a result of their strong feelings of remonstrance at the fall of the Han dynasty. It is possible that where large numbers of

men have come together certain men of rank, means, and influence have been appointed to work on behalf of less favoured members. But what I wish the Court to specially bear in mind is that the alleged plot was the result of the general feeling of remonstrance on the part of conservative Koreans against the annexation of the country by Japan. This fact, in my opinion, is very important in estimating the gravity of the charge preferred against these 123 men. It is an essential point in considering the question of putting the whole responsibility upon one man, Baron Yun, as the originator or leader of the conspiracy.

#### THE GROWTH OF ANTI-JAPANESE SENTIMENT.

"In order to support my argument that this plot was the outcome of general opposition to the annexation of Korea, let us examine some earlier facts. Shortly after the Russo-Japanese war Japan declared Korea to be a protectorate. This was about 1906, and the event caused something like a panic among the conservative Koreans. The anti-Japanese campaign which was carried on was simply wonderful. The newspapers were full of burning words and expressions against Japan. The Japanese were described as intruders; Prince Ito, the Resident-General, was described as a robber; and General Okubo, then in command of the Japanese army in Korea, was referred to as a burglar. There was a strong movement for developing the 'Korean spirit.' Inflammatory writings and speeches were of daily occurrence in every corner of north-west Korea. The Residency-General seized or suppressed many of these papers and I myself have seen a pile of documents of this character which had been seized. Whether this disorderly demonstration was mere show on the part of the Koreans I do not know, but there is no question that such a campaign was carried out against Japan and the Japanese. The authorities did all they could to stamp out this movement, but apparently with little success, for eventually Prince Ito was assassinated, and now there are 123 Koreans charged with the attempted but un consummated assassination of Count Terauchi, the Governor-General. I often prophesied in the early days of Korean discontent that their feelings might end in some fatal attempt being made upon high

Japanese officials. Prince Ito and Count Terauchi were of the same opinion, as I myself have heard them say.

"I have already said that the present case has resulted from an involuntary explosion of indignation at the downfall of the Han dynasty. It was certainly not planned by any one set of people. Such a movement was only natural in the circumstances, but I have reasons to believe that it is almost impossible for the Koreans to have any hope, and certainly none of accomplishing, the plans they had at the time of the annexation—declaring their opposition to or independence of Japan. This to me seems an unwise policy in view of Japan's position and influence in the Far East and in the world. If some of the Koreans did have such an idea in the early days of the annexation, it would be as vain as trying to hold back the progress of the sun towards the west. No well-informed people would listen to any such plan, even if it were advanced, and it is most improbable that any further occurrences of this nature will happen.

#### BARON YUN'S POSITION.

"I shall now proceed to deal with this case as it specially affects Baron Yun. There is no more reason to associate Baron Yun with this affair than there is to anticipate any further movement of the Koreans against Japan, now that they understand the power and position of Japan. The present case has been sent up for trial by the Procurator as one of premeditated but unconsummated murder. But on examining the written indictment of the Procurator, it will be seen that the accused, in opposing the administration of the Government-General only had a political object in view—to restore the independence of Korea. It is said they planned the assassination of the Governor-General as a means of realising their object, but this was discovered and frustrated their scheme. In my opinion, however, the accused should be charged with rebellion, and not with the charge which has been filed against them, for, even assuming that they had arranged this plot, it was not Count Terauchi as an individual whom they wished to assassinate, but Count Terauchi, the Governor-General. I shall leave this point, however, to be dealt with by the other barristers who are appearing for the defence, as I understand that the Court agrees that the offence with which

the accused are charged is a political one.

#### "PECULIAR ACTION" OF THE AUTHORITIES.

"Now, in regard to the application of the law to this case. The Criminal Code of the old Korean Government is to be applied, a few articles of which survive even to the present day. I should like to know why it is a few Articles of this old Code are retained in view of the new Code recently promulgated by the Japanese authorities and enforced in this peninsula. I have tried to get at the true meaning of this peculiar action by the authorities, but have not been successful. But although I confess that I do not know the reason for the application of the old Code to this case, I do know that the surviving Articles of that Code are to be applied in arriving at a judgement of this case. I have examined these Articles, and found them to be inferior to the laws in force in any civilised country. Article 86, which the Procurator says should be applied to the accused, provides that those who have 'prepared' to carry out a conspiracy shall be punished. This is a very striking Article. If the men who made this law intended it to apply to such a case as the present, then we must accept it. But I wish to point out to the Court that this law is not what it ought to be, and that it does not agree with the modern civilised standard of penal law. The Court should therefore not strictly adhere to the spirit of this now out-of-date law.

"Again, Article 86 provides that those who have made preparations for carrying out a crime, but have been unable to execute it on account of unforeseen circumstances, are held liable to meet the charge of unconsummated crime. I cannot agree to this provision. I believe that if a man makes his preparations for committing a crime, but abandons the idea, he is not liable to be charged with unconsummated crime, but with suspended crime. Supposing that the accused did prepare to carry out the conspiracy, they suspended the crime on their own accord, or they had to give up the idea owing to force of circumstances or misunderstanding. This point must be very carefully considered. It is evident that the law is not intended to punish those who may have had a scheme to commit an offence, but who have not carried it into practice, for a suspension of crime is what is wished for or expected by the

law. Even the Chinese law recognises that a suspended crime is no crime at all. I therefore respectfully urge that the Court should take into consideration the fact that the accused, assuming that they had joined in a conspiracy, suspended the crime either voluntarily or were compelled to do so by force of circumstances.

#### WHAT ARE "UNFORESEEN CIRCUMSTANCES"?

"The Procurator said that the accused proceeded to the railway stations with the object of carrying out their conspiracy, but were unable to execute their plans owing to the strict guard which was maintained. I thought, in listening in the Procurator's speech, that by the words 'strict guard' the Procurator meant the 'unforeseen circumstances' mentioned in the old Code. It is stated in the records of this case that some of the accused went to the railway stations to kill the Governor-General, but could not do so owing to the strict police surveillance. It is a question whether police surveillance constitutes an 'unforeseen circumstance,' and whether the presence of police and gendarmes at the stations really did constitute 'unforeseen circumstances' to prevent the consummation of a crime.

Count Terachi, the Governor-General, has really the same position and authority in the peninsula as the late Emperor of Korea. No doubt as Governor-General he required to be more strictly guarded than a Resident-General when making a tour of inspection. We may certainly conclude that the accused, who knew what was done in this respect in the days of the Resident-General and who saw how strongly Prince Ito was guarded when he made his tours through the country, would know that the Governor-General would be still more strictly guarded, especially during the weeks immediately following the annexation of Korea. The accused must have known that the guards at the stations would be very strict. Would it then be logical to say that the suspension of the execution of the alleged conspiracy was due to 'unforeseen circumstances' when the circumstances were the strict guard which was maintained, and so render these men liable to a charge of un consummated crime, in accordance with the Article of the old Korean Code already referred to? I hold that this Article does not apply to the present case at all

#### WAS THERE ANY INTENTION TO KILL?

"Much more strongly do I submit that this Article does not apply when we come to consider that there is some doubt as to whether the accused really intended to assassinate the Governor-General at all. According to the records of this case, some of the accused stated that when they came face to face with the Governor-General they trembled at the thought of the deed they were to do, and could not take out their revolvers to attack him. Others are represented to have said that they did not fire because certain other persons whom it had been prearranged should shoot first did not do so. When the Procurator asked them why they did not step out from their positions among the files of men and shoot, they said—according to the official documents in this case—that they did not think of it. Others said that they saw the Governor-General walking along within three paces of them, but failed to attack him, and returned with hundreds of others, with their weapons unused. All this sounds to me as though the Koreans, out of vainglory, were unable to resist the temptation to take part in a plot, and went to the station without any real intention of assassinating the Governor-General. I am really very sorry to refer to the accused in this way, but if they had really decided to kill the Governor-General, and had even committed armed burglaries in order to obtain funds for carrying out their scheme, it is impossible that they should not have found some opportunity to make an attack upon the Governor-General at one or other of the many places at which they assembled. From the fact that the accused all blame another man for not having fired a shot, I must be allowed to doubt whether any of them ever had any real intention of carrying out the plot from the very beginning. One of the accused, in explaining why he had failed to shoot the Governor-General, said in his examination in the Procurator's Office that he could not do so because of his weak mind. In such a case as this, the Procurator's recommendation to apply Article 86, which provides for those who give up the idea of crime owing to 'unforeseen circumstances,' is obviously illogical, since the accused being of a weak mind was unable from the first to carry out any plan. He had no courage to commit a crime even though he wished to, and so naturally had to suspend execution of the crime.

"According to the records of this case, Baron Yun appears to have planned the whole plot himself, and to have got others to carry it out; he is made to appear to be the originator of the crime. Now, I submit that even supposing the Baron was implicated in this affair, it is impossible for him to have been the instigator. The charge, as the Procurator has said, is based upon the confession of the accused; his confession is the most essential part of the evidence. The Procurator has said that no one having perused the record of the evidence could doubt the soundness of the case for the prosecution, and this statement seems reasonable enough, inasmuch as it is impossible that these bulky records could be nothing but a mass of misrepresentation and untruth. On the other hand, it seems to me that it is impossible to assume that the whole of this evidence is true and based upon fact. Chang Pil-sok and Pak Nai-hyo were acquitted of any connection with this charge, because the Procurator recognised that their confessions were not true, and this opens the way for every other man among the accused to deny the truth of his confession. These statements by the accused are very important to us barristers for the defence, for we have to ascertain whether the confessions are to be implicitly relied upon. The Procurator has admitted that the confessions of the two men just mentioned left 'room for doubt' as to their genuineness, and led him to make further inquiries, when it was discovered that their statements were untrue, and they were acquitted. We who are appearing in defence of the accused have been unable to find one confession which seems to us to be truthful and convincing.

#### CONFESSIONS OF IMAGINARY OFFENCES.

"In their confessions Chang and Pak made statements as to their alleged movements which, as the Procurator says, their questioners could have had no previous knowledge of. They gave full details about the conspiracy, the names of those who went to the station with them to carry out the plot, and the positions they took up. On reading the records of the police examination of these two men, I was surprised at the minuteness with which they had described everything, in connection with the affair, and concluding from this that they were certainly guilty of the charge, I looked for their

names on the list of the accused. To my great surprise, I could not find their names, and I wondered how they had managed to evade responsibility for their self-confessed crime. I was still more surprised to find that they had both been acquitted by the Procurator, as further investigations had shown that on the day on which these men had confessed that they went with others to the railway station they were actually in custody at gendarmerie stations in different parts of the country on totally different charges! This incident shows that the Procurator himself does not hold that the confessions of the accused must be accepted without question as being accurate and truthful. But what of the men whom Pak and Chang declared went to the railway station with them? Does the Procurator believe this part of the confession and not the other? If so, the remarkable situation comes about that the authorities, in investigating certain charges against the accused, reject one portion of a confession as being untrue, but accept the other as evidence against other men, although those who 'confessed' were admittedly not with the men whom they incriminate!

#### ANOTHER MYSTERIOUS FACT.

"Then there is another mysterious fact. According to the confession of one of the accused, two police inspectors in the service of the Government-General took part in the preliminary arrangement of the conspiracy, and by virtue of their position as officials actually led the conspirators on to the platform at the railway station. These officers are also said to have given information as to the expected arrival of the Governor-General. The accused who confessed these statements also said that, after a fruitless journey to the station, the other conspirators remonstrated with the two officers and blamed them for not carrying out the plan, since they were quite close to the Governor-General. The officers replied—so the confession goes on—that they could not execute the plot themselves since none of the other conspirators dared to fire, but at the same time they apologised to the other conspirators for not having taken advantage of the opportunity they had. On reading this extraordinary confession, I wondered how it was that these two officers had not been prosecuted for their share in the

affair. I can hardly believe that these two officers are still in the service of the Government-General,—that is, if the confession implicating them has been accepted by the Procurator. But the fact that they are still in the service, despite the evidence given in the confession of one of the other accused, shows that the Procurator has again come to the conclusion that this confession—so far as it implicates these two officers—is unreliable.

#### THE POSITION OF THE MISSIONARIES.

"The man who made the confession implicating these two officers was examined several times. From the records of his examination it seems that certain foreign missionaries at Syen Chuen and Pyongyang were actually the ringleaders of the conspiracy. They are represented in this confession to have urged the accused men to carry out the plot, to have distributed revolvers to the men, and to have given them money with which to get away and escape the clutches of the police. Mr. Moffett has complained that this man has represented him as having done various things in connection with the affair at a time when the missionary in question was actually away from Korea. Of the foreign missionaries who have been implicated by the confessions of the accused, Mr. McCune is represented to be the prime mover. Now, if the man who made this confession is to be punished, it stands to reason that Mr. McCune must also be punished for his share in the affair as set forth in the confession. Now, I ask the Court, can the confession of this man be accepted in its entirety? Have not the authorities some doubt about the evidence he has given? If they have not, if his confession is to be accepted, why have they not arrested Mr. McCune? I can only conclude that the foreign missionaries, like the Korean police-inspectors, are not held to be implicated in this charge, but this clearly shows the unreliability of the evidence upon which the whole case is founded, although the authorities have attempted to make use of it by rejecting certain portions and retaining other parts.

#### FURTHER EXAMPLES OF UNRELIABLE EVIDENCE

"I have still more examples of the unreliability of the confessions which have

been made by the accused. According to the examination of the men alleged to have been concerned in an attempted attack upon the Governor-General at Syen Chuen railway station, they all said that they went from Chyongju to Syen Chuen by railway, and that the party numbered some scores of men. Investigation made later, however, showed that on the day in question only 9 passengers were carried from Chyongpu to Syen Chuen, and only 1 passenger in the opposite direction. This fact was established by evidence given by a Government official in open Court. Yet many of the accused are stated in the records of their examination to have confessed to having gone to Syen Chuen from Nap Chyongjong in large parties. Now, what can be the motive of these men in making such confessions?

"I cannot see why men should confess to this effect, nor can I believe that their confessions are true when they differ so much from one another on points which are supposed to be identical. We have heard from the Procurator that some of the men must have gone down to Syen Chuen on the day previous to that on which they were at first believed to have gone, and the Procurator has also suggested that some of the accused covered the distance between the two places on foot. Such statements are like so much gossip over a cup of tea; I cannot take them seriously. I maintain that those who have to decide the guilt or innocence of men accused of a crime cannot do so on mere supposititious evidence, but can only come to a decision on actual facts. I therefore hold that the so-called confession of the accused to the effect that they went to Syen Chuen via Nap Chyongjong and Chyongju cannot be accepted as a statement of fact. In what light does the Court regard this evidence? If this point, which does not correspond with the evidence given by a railway official, is nevertheless accepted, but the Court declines to accept another point which, if similarly investigated, might be found to be true, it is in this way the Chief Procurator urges that judgement should be given—it will be a most remarkable course to pursue. I must say that since I have read the records of the evidence taken in this case, my opinion as to their accuracy and validity has greatly changed. The Procurator himself has denied a portion of these confessions,

and I think that the Court, too, is convinced that this evidence is not worthy of credit. In short, I submit that this case must not be decided solely upon the evidence contained in the so-called confessions of the accused.

#### THE CASE FOR BARON YUN.

"Turning now to this case as it affects Baron Yun. I shall not dwell just now upon the point as to whether his statement is to be believed or not, but the general circumstances of the case make it very clear to me that we must not draw any conclusions as to his guilt merely from his so-called confessions at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office. Much more careful should we be in accepting the confessions of the other accused so far as they implicate the Baron, for they are still more dubious. I contend that the Baron's connection with this affair must be proved by something more substantial than this evidence if he is to be found guilty of the charge brought against him. The particular charge, as the Procurator pointed out the other day, is that Baron Yun, in August, October, November, and December, 1910, met Yang Ki-tak and others at Im's house in Seoul, and together with them planned this conspiracy. Now, even assuming that Baron Yun did meet the others at Im's house, there is not sufficient evidence to prove what took place at the meetings. The evidence given by Yi, the old servant of Im, is the main testimony on this matter, but I shall show the Court that this man's statements are false.

#### THE QUESTION OF DATES.

"The main point in connection with proving or disproving these visits is the question of date, and this is a matter about which people are apt to make mistakes, as we have already seen. But in regard to the man Yi, there is no mistake. When he gave his evidence he said that he could not forget the date of the first meeting between Baron Yun and the others at the house, because it was his son's birthday, September 10th. Now this statement is false, for I have proof that the Baron was not there that day. In reply to this the Procurator—rather unfairly—says that Baron Yun must have been there some other day if he was not there on the day mentioned by Yi. But if it is proved that the

Baron did not go to Im's house on the day which Yi is so certain about, it shows that Yi's evidence is not to be relied upon. In regard to the alleged second visit, Yi says he could not have made a mistake about this date either, since it fell upon his own birthday. Then, in regard to the alleged third visit, Yi says he is certain about this date because he was ill at the time, and he also remembers that one of his neighbours moved that day. All this evidence given by Yi is false, and my brother counsel and myself have put in a number of exhibits to prove that the Baron was not in Seoul on the dates mentioned by Yi. Baron Yun was at Kaisong at this time, engaged in matters connected either with the church or scholastic business, and it was impossible for him to have been at Im's house at Seoul. In reply to this, the Procurator suggests that if Baron Yun was not in Seoul on the dates mentioned, he might have been there on other days. Now, I have produced exhibits proving where the Baron was on the days which were mentioned in the indictment on which this case is based. If the Procurator meant to infer that Baron Yun was also attending these alleged conferences on other days, he should have mentioned the dates in the indictment or disclosed them before the conclusion of the hearing of evidence, when I am certain I should have been able to put in further evidence to disprove these allegations. Despite the alleged fact that Yi's testimony in regard to dates is substantiated by being connected with certain important events in his life, I have shown it to be absolutely worthless and unreliable. The other evidence against Baron Yun is that of two men who are alleged to have discussed the plot to assassinate the Governor-General with Baron Yun at Kaisong and to have taken a message from the Baron to the members of the New People's Society at Pyong-yang. Both these statements are denied by the Baron. We now come to the confession of the Baron himself.

#### BARON YUN'S CONFESSION.

"The confession made by Baron Yun has rather an important bearing upon this case, and I have taken some trouble to investigate the reliability of this evidence. The Procurator has said that the ground upon which the Baron retracted his confession was a very weak one. I thought it advisable to investigate the

actual circumstances in which the Baron made his confession, and I called upon him in prison to learn from him what took place. He told me that while his statements at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office were untrue, yet when he was examined in open Court he could not bring himself to actually admit that his former statements were devoid of truth.

"Now, why should Baron Yun have made the statements attributed to him in the record of his confession? Yun tells me that at the time he was examined and made the statement in question, he thought the examination was in connection with a criminal case for which Yang Ki-tak was tried the previous year. Baron Yun had succeeded to his father's title and property, and since he had come to better understand the position of Japan in world-politics, was not a little sorry that he was connected with the New People's Society, which he had joined some years previously. The Baron, then, when he was examined, was under the impression that he was being re-examined in connection with the Yang Ki-tak affair, and his examiners asked why it was that while Yang and the others had already confessed to the facts, he still declined to admit them. Moved by the sense of regret at being connected with the Society, as I have already mentioned, Yun decided that it would be better for him to endorse what Yang was reported to have said, and take his punishment as soon as possible. When afterwards he learned that he was under arrest in connection with an entirely different charge, he was astounded, and he was also greatly distressed to think that he had said that which was not true.

"There must be some doubt as to why Baron Yun made such a confession against his own will, and on such a ground. At the same time, it must be admitted that his ideas and thoughts are different from ours, just as his social position and his career are different. Although I confess it is difficult for me to understand his reason for confession to certain matters which have no foundation in fact, yet I realise that he himself must have had good reason for doing so.

"Baron Yun contributed his share to wars bringing about the annexation of Korea. He is a man of good education and social standing. Among the anti-Japanese party he is not regarded as a

man who would resort to extreme measures on his own initiative; he was in fact blamed for his lack of courage to do anything decisive, but at the same time he was respected and trusted by them, and he was not subjected to any official surveillance. Moreover, he was well acquainted with the general trend of world politics, and it is only natural to conclude that he would not take part in any extreme measures which may have been suggested. I have heard a number of the Baron's friends remark that he was not the sort of man to be mixed up in an affair of the character of this case, and I am inclined to believe that this is so. He is certainly not the man who would dare to kill a single Governor-General, and he must realise that even if he assassinated one Governor-General, a hundred other Governors-General would follow, and that even the disposal of all these officials one after another would not make any change in regard to Japan's administration in the peninsula. Thinking this over, I cannot help expressing some doubt about the alleged confession of the Baron. It is stated in the record of his examination that he said he would bring the Yang Ki-tak affair to an end as soon as possible by saying whatever he thought advisable, and this suggests to me the state of mind in which he confessed to statements which had no foundation. He also said in open Court that he did not admit that he was a ringleader, but that he said he would take the whole responsibility of the affair—meaning the affair of the previous year, in which Yang Ki-tak was concerned. I cannot help but sympathise with the Baron in his position in connection with this case. In considering his confession with those of the other accused, does it not seem as though a man who has no connection with the case is being dragged in? Does the Court intend to give judgement against Baron Yun on such evidence as I have reviewed, and on such a confession? To me it seems most improper to judge a case merely upon the confession of the accused party, and I think that even the fact that there is such a plentiful lack of evidence against him should be sufficient to ensure the Baron being acquitted of this serious charge.

#### THE LEGAL ASPECT OF THE CASE

"Referring now to the legal aspect, the plot referred to in this case is a



'suspended crime' [i.e. a crime that has not taken actual shape] and is therefore not within the purview of the law. But even if this were not the case, the fact that the Baron took part in the conspiracy is not established by the evidence which has been produced. In the event of both these arguments being overruled, and the Baron is found guilty, I urge that his sentence should be made as light as possible. The Procurator is himself in favour of a light sentence, since it is recognised that this affair is only a natural phenomenon resulting from the peculiar political circumstances attending the fall of the Korean dynasty. There is no occasion to impose a heavy sentence in order that the punishment awarded may act as a deterrent to the Korean people, because the peninsula is now in a settled condition, so that a repetition of the conspiracy which is said to have been formed need not be feared. The one thing we should retain in our minds is the subjective observation of the mental conditions of the accused in regard to this plot, and try to discover whether it would be planned for a selfish purpose or from public-spirited motives. Assuming that the Baron was responsible for the conspiracy, we must also assume that his reason was either that he did not understand the movement of world-politics, or that he could not resist the temptation to join in the plot when he thought of all that he and his ancestors owed to the ruined dynasty. In these circumstances the act would be done for the sake of the country and her people. The enterprise might be a foolish one, but it should be recognised that the motive was good.

"My first idea of this case, from what I had been told, was that it concerned an insurrection on the part of a large number of men of influence, who had formed a plot against Japanese authority, but on looking closely into the case I have been unable to regard the affair as a really serious matter. An army of some hundreds of men is said to have been formed to kill a single man, yet when this one man faced them, they every one drew back and shrunk from the idea of carrying out their alleged plans. I am unable to understand the real circumstances in which this wonderful scheme was formed, and though it may be regarded as an offence of an inexcusable nature, there is no necessity for imposing severe punishment upon

those concerned in it. Such an affair as this is not peculiar to Korea; similar affairs have occurred in all parts of the world when similar political changes have taken place, and they have sometimes been very dangerous affairs. I think it is possible that the reason this affair was not carried further is the relationship which exists between the Koreans and the Japanese, the similarity of many of their customs, religion, and learning. The troubles which have taken place abroad, between Russia and Finland, for example, and between Germany and Alsace-Lorraine, were of quite a different nature, and had their beginnings in different circumstances, inasmuch as the annexation of Korea was effected on the authority of the Emperor of Korea. Reviewing all these various points, I am unable to regard this case seriously, and I feel compelled to urge that any foreign precedent in dealing with similar affairs be not adopted in deciding this case. I would therefore respectfully urge the Court to regard this case as not being a serious one, and to deal with those who are accused of complicity in it with leniency."

The Court then adjourned for fifteen, and on reassembling Mr. Saito, a Seoul barrister, addressed the Court. He commenced by saying that the case was based solely upon the confessions of the accused, and pointed out that the unreliability of those confessions had already been shown by other counsel for the defence. He proceeded:—

"According to the records of the examination of the accused, they confessed that a number of foreigners were concerned in this affair. The foreigners at Pyong-vang were alleged to have delivered inflammatory speeches to members of the New People's Society at meetings held in the Taisong school, while the foreigner who is the principal of the mission school at Syen Chuen was said to have gone so far as to tell the conspirators that they should shoot the Japanese officer with whom he would shake hands. These foreigners, however, were not proceeded against by the Procurator, which as I understand it indicates that he considered these confessions were unreliable. There were other men who confessed that they were concerned in the alleged plot, but who were openly acquitted. Are these same confessions, regarded by the Procurator as unreliable, to be accepted as authentic

by the Court?" Counsel concluded by saying that the case was one of a political nature, and that if the accused were sentenced to punishment, they should be treated with lenience on that ground.

#### KOREAN COUNSEL'S SPEECH.

Mr. Kim Chung-mok, a Korean barrister, next addressed the Court, his speech being translated into Japanese by the Court interpreter as follows:—

"This case has attracted attention all over the world. Although Baron Yun is regarded by the authorities as one of the ringleaders, he is as a matter of fact a man of the highest character, ready to lead men to the temple of righteousness, and always free from any sort of wickedness. Though it is a fact that An Chung-keun, indignant at the conclusion of the Five Article Treaty and the Seven Article Treaty, assassinated Prince Ito, his act was not endorsed by the whole of the Korean nation. The Chief Procurator has said that no trace of torture had been found upon the bodies of any of the accused when they were examined, but how could such traces be detected some ten months after the torture was inflicted? The accused denied their guilt in open Court, and in view of the circumstances I am forced to conclude that the confessions of accused as represented in the records of their examination at the police headquarters and the Procurator's Office must be absolutely false."

On the conclusion of the Korean counsel's speech the proceedings were adjourned until next day.

## THE SEVENTEENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### THE CASE FOR THE DEFENCE.

#### MR. MIYAKE'S SPEECH.

SEOUL, August 27.

To-day the counsel appearing for the defence continued their speeches on behalf of their clients. Mr. Miyake (formerly a Judge in the Seoul Court, but now practising at the Bar) resumed his speech, which it will be remembered he interrupted in order to allow Mr. Ogawa, who had come down from Tokyo, to address the Court on behalf of Baron Yun. Mr. Miyake also took up the defence of

the Baron, and continuing his speech, which he began yesterday, said:—

#### WHY BARON YUN "CONFESSED."

"Baron Yun's idea in making the confession he did at the police headquarters was this—he wanted to take upon his own shoulders the entire responsibility for the affairs he believed he was being examined about (i.e. the previous charge against Yang Kitak). He did not care what other people said about him; all he wanted to do was to finally settle the matter by taking all the responsibility upon himself. He placed himself upon the altar of sacrifice at the risk of his own life. I was given by Yun himself four reasons why he made such a confession, but it is hardly necessary to state them. Now, there should be no other reason for a confession than that it is a voluntary admission of facts, and if there is any other reason for a confession, such a statement is bad in law, no matter what the object or cause, because it is nothing else than a lie, and to tell a lie is also a crime from a moral point of view. Such an offence cannot be committed by those who believe in God, and the fact that Yun first confessed to that which he did not mean, and then withdrew it is simply a demonstration of the truth of this statement. Though some people may call him a coward, Yun is absolutely sincere about his denial of his first statement. His object in making the first statement was admirable in its way, and there is no reason why he should feel any shame about retracting it.

"But while the object of Baron Yun in making his confession in the first place was a noble one, his reason for retracting it was still more pure and noble. It was not due to any selfish motive. Being an educated man, he knew what would be the best way to protect himself, but he considered neither his own reputation nor immunity. He is a scrupulous man, and like most religious men does not unthinkingly endorse any proposal which may be made. He would not lend his support to any scheme which was not for good, and it is impossible to conceive a man like the Baron planning anything like a plot himself. He consented to become director of the Taisong school at the urgent solicitation of An Chang-ho, because a man of good name and position was wanted for the post; he was put up as a sort of signboard for the

school. And at this point I wish to urge the Court to very closely ascertain whether the Taisong school was, as is alleged, an institution for turning out young men with their heads full of dangerous ideas, or not. It is most important that this case should not be decided on any preconceived opinions, and I would urge upon the Court the importance of very carefully examining the record of the facts of the case.

"According to these records, Baron Yun is reported to have said that An Chang-ho, in explaining the objects of the New People's Society, dwelt upon the fact that there was no systematic effort to encourage education and industry in Korea, and it was on the understanding that this work was to be undertaken by the Society that Yun accepted a leading position in that Society. I believe that this statement is quite true. The Baron also said that while the objects of the Society were legitimate and peaceful enough, some of the members were moved by the political change which took place to harbour dangerous thoughts against Japan, but this, of course, was not due to the influence of the Society. Yun is not the sort of man who would join a society which had assassination as its object. He is a man who is well-to-do, with a happy home and loving children, and it is impossible that such a man, living in such quiet and happy surroundings, would join, much less start a conspiracy to assassinate anyone. The men who engage in such wicked enterprises are men of no position, no property, and no scruple. If it is argued that the Baron was tricked into joining the Society in order that his name might be used as having ordered the assassination of the Governor-General, he must still be held to be innocent of the charge which has been made against him, and if he should be punished on the basis of his implication on this ground, it would show that the Court is unable to distinguish pebbles from gems, as the saying goes.

#### THE ALLEGED MEETINGS.

"As for the alleged meetings between Yun and others at Im's house at Seoul, the evidence which has been put in by my brother counsel and myself has completely refuted the official allegations on this point. From the Procurator's last speech it seems that he has now no de-

finite idea as to the date of the Baron's alleged visits to Im's house. Since no definite date is mentioned, I am placed in the position of being unable to produce rebutting evidence. If Yun had never gone to the capital, there would be no occasion for me to produce counter-evidence, beyond a plain denial, but it so happens that he used to go to Seoul about once a month to see his mother. If he ever called at Im's house, it must have been on one of these occasions. But the dates do not agree, and moreover he never did call upon Im. It is not likely that a man of Baron Yun's position would call upon Im, whose position and rank were so much inferior; it would be quite contrary to Korean custom.

"Further, it has been alleged that Baron Yun met Yang Chom-miung at Kaisong at a summer meeting there called to discuss the plot for the assassination of the Governor-General. This allegation scarcely needs refuting when it is considered that the meeting was purely educational, was open to anyone belonging to the South Methodist Church, and was attended by several foreigners. It is most unlikely that on such an occasion as this there would be any talk about such a matter as a conspiracy, and moreover, there is no proof that any meeting between Yun and Yang took place on this occasion. Again, in preparing such a great affair as this conspiracy is made out to be, these concerned must have met and discussed their plans on several occasions, if they really formed a plot at all, but the evidence which has been submitted on this head is extremely vague. The assertions that the Baron framed the plot, instructed his followers to abandon the idea of stirring up public speaking and to resort to assassination, and made a speech at the Taisong school meeting urging the assassination of the Governor-General—all these points are extremely ambiguous, and have not been established by the prosecution. If the Court allows itself to be influenced by any preconceptions formed of Baron Yun and these men who are charged with him, what will the world say about Japanese justice?

"The charge that Baron Yun was the instigator and promoter of this alleged conspiracy is not supported by any evidence whatever. If he had been, he must have taken part in the attempts which it is alleged were made upon the Governor-General before he could be adjudged

guilty of attempted but unconsummated murder. I do not remember even the Procurator suggesting that Baron Yun took part in any of the alleged attempts, and since the accused also denies that he took part in the alleged scheme, he must be acquitted. His father did good work towards bringing about the annexation of Korea, and he has succeeded to his father's title and honours. It would be unjust to pass sentence upon him and make him forfeit the good name of his family merely on account of a little blunder on his part. I urge the Court to pronounce him innocent of this charge.'

When Mr. Miyake had concluded his long speech in defence of Baron Yun, he made another address on behalf of a number of the Korean accused. He deplored the unsatisfactory manner in which the facts of the case had been investigated, and also expressed regret that the Court had seen fit to dismiss *in toto* the applications which had been made for the calling of witnesses and the production of evidence for the defence. Mr. Hoshi, a Seoul barrister, followed, his speech being on the same lines, and he also contended that the accused could not be dealt with under Article 86 of the old Korean Code, as urged by the Procurator.

#### A CURIOUS INCIDENT.

Mr. Nagai, a barrister who has for a long time been practising in Seoul, next rose and announced that he was appearing in defence of Yi Kuni-tang. Yi at once rose from his seat and asked the permission of the Court to make a statement. Permission being given, Yi said that he did not wish the lawyer to speak on his behalf.

By the Court: What is your reason for thus protesting against the barrister? Did you not sign an application asking that he should defend you?—Yes I did, but until now I have never seen the lawyer, and have not had any conversation with him about my defence.

That may be explained by the lawyer himself; just listen to him.—I cannot understand him, and I do not want him to defend me to-day.

Mr. Nagai addressed the Court, saying that as the accused did not want to be defended by him, he would of course retire, but he wished that the accused had given notice of his wishes a little sooner.

KOREAN COUNSEL ON THE "CONFESSIONS"

Mr. Pak Yong-tai, a Korean barrister, then stood up to address the Court, which

he did in most fluent Japanese. His speech, which was mainly devoted to a criticism of the "confessions," was as follows:—

"Although the Procurator has said that the confessions of the accused were voluntary, I wish to express my very grave doubts about it. The confessions of Chang and Pak at the police headquarters were exactly the same as those of the other accused, according to the official records, but these two men were discharged on the ground that their statements did not correspond with the facts. Even supposing that the confessions of the other accused were not wrung from them by torture, but were made quite voluntarily, I cannot believe—in view of the acquittal of these other two men who made precisely similar confessions—that these statements are of any value as statements of fact. It has been stated that two police-inspectors also took part in this affair, but they, too, have not been proceeded against, which only goes to show that the Procurator does not wholly believe in the confessions which have been made.

"Seeing, then, that the confessions are not trustworthy, let us proceed to see what can be taken as evidence in this case. The most important point, it seems to me, is in connection with the revolvers which the accused are alleged to have carried down to the railway stations with the object of using them for assassinating the Governor-General. Only two or three weapons have been seized by the authorities and produced as exhibits in Court, whereas according to the confessions of the accused there should be at least 200. Some of the accused have said that these weapons were entrusted to foreigners for safe keeping. If this is so, domiciliary searches might be made even now, but this has not been done. This again shows that the authorities themselves recognise that the confessions of the accused are unreliable, and therefore I contend that the accused should be found not guilty of this charge, or, in the alternative, that their sentences should be postponed."

Mr. Nakamura, another local barrister appearing for the defence, also made an attack upon the case for the prosecution so far as it rests upon the alleged confessions. He said:—

"The Procurator has declared that when the authorities in charge of this case first started to examine the accused, they had no idea that such a serious offence as afterwards came to light had

ever been contemplated. In conducting the examination of these men it was contended that as the authorities had no suspicion of the disclosures which were eventually made, therefore in these circumstances the confessions of the accused must be credited. I cannot accept this argument of the Procurator, for I do not believe it possible that the authorities could have been ignorant of the alleged facts of this case. My opinion is that the authorities had information leading them to suspect that a plot had been formed, and when they examined the accused, the latter made just whatever statements they thought would gratify their questioners.

"The Procurator also said that the accused, being ignorant of Japanese legal procedure, had the idea that they would be acquitted if they denied the charge in open Court. This, however, is not so; on the contrary, they have pleaded that they are not guilty and that there is no evidence against them to the contrary. The Procurator has also said that the statements of the accused in open Court, withdrawing their previous confessions, could not be accepted because they all made statements of the same character. If this sort of argument is accepted by the Court, I should like to argue that all the official records which the Procurator holds are unacceptable, inasmuch as they are all in the same style—that is, all the confessions of the accused are similar to each other. The confessions also implicate O Heni-won and Baron Yun, and various well-known men are alleged to have taken part in the plot. Those of us who have had experience in handling criminal cases in Korea know very well that it is quite usual for a Korean charged with some offence to endeavour to incriminate some well-known man or the other. Therefore I am not surprised to see that O, who is a man worth about ¥4,500,000, has been dragged into this case.

"As Mr. Ogawa and Mr. Miyake have already pointed out in their addresses to the Court, the present affair—assuming it to have been of the nature alleged by the Procurator—must be regarded as the natural upheaval of public opinion after the annexation of the country. The annexation, however, was carried out with the consent of the Korean Emperor, and before it was effected the country was the centre of all sorts of unrest and intrigue. This was because the administration was wrong, and it was wrong to

such an extent that people used to hide their money whenever they got any in order to prevent it being seized by officials. All this is now changed, and the new administration is quite different from the old, and a man of wealth can enjoy peace and security. How then is it possible that a wealthy man like O could have taken part in such a wicked scheme as that alleged by the Procurator? The sort of men who take part in conspiracies are those who have no property, no position, and no knowledge, or else they are young men with hot headed ideas. I again say that O was not the sort of man to take part in a scheme of this kind, and I urge that he and the other accused also should be acquitted of this charge."

In the afternoon three Korean barristers addressed the Court in their own language, their speeches being interpreted by the Court interpreter. Mr. Yun Pang-hiun said that the assassination of Prince Ito, although it occurred outside Korea, merely hastened the annexation of the country. The assassin was a man from North Pyongan-do, and the man who attacked Count Yi, the ex-Korean Premier, came from the same province, and it was for this reason that the authorities came to pay considerable attention to the doings of the people in that quarter. The reason that Count Yi was stabbed was because he was regarded by the people as one of the "Five Traitors" and the "Seven Betrayers," but even a little child knows that the murder of Prince Ito was a grievous crime which did no good to Korea.

"The charge in the present case is described as premeditated but unconsummated assassination, or rather, to give the legal phrase, *imbo* (conspiracy), meaning a secret plot against the sovereignty. But there was no occasion for hundreds of men to unite together to kill a single man in the person of the Governor-General. Moreover, the alleged conspirators are nearly all young men, with whom it is quite improbable that a man like Baron Yun would be mixed up in a plot. Then there is the allegation that the conspirators went to the railway stations with the object of assassinating the Governor-General. If they did, surely their object would have been detected when they were subjected to bodily search before being allowed upon the platform? It does not sound feasible that a whole

company of men should have gone to the railway station just to kill one man.

#### THE FEAR OF OFFICIALS.

"That the Koreans generally are afraid of Government officials is well known, and in Kangyong-do this is especially the case, owing to the unusually severe official tyranny to which the people there had been subjected before the peninsula was annexed by Japan. The people there fear the officials more than they do tigers, a fact which may be seen from the official records. There may be a few among the accused who realised what being kept in custody really meant, but I think the great majority have no idea of the legal limitation of the powers of the police and the gendarmerie. Such men when arrested would naturally be seized with fear and anxiety as to their fate, and upon being subjected to some form of torture—such as being suspended head downwards—would have quickly confessed to things they did not mean. That the confessions which were obtained were worthless is shown by the manner in which the confessions of Pak and Chang were rejected by the authorities, and I urge the Court to pronounce the accused not guilty."

Mr. Kwan Hyuk-chai, another Korean barrister, also contended that the confessions of the accused were worthless. He said that the Koreans were naturally afraid of the officials owing to their being subjected for years to oppression in official quarters, and in order to escape from their attentions would say anything. In his opinion the accused in the present case must have admitted statements which they knew to be false merely because they wished to escape oppression, and to have said "yes, yes" to any questions which were put to them, in the belief that the men who had been examined before them had confessed to these things. That the so-called confessions were mere fabrications was to be seen from the fact that a number of the accused had admitted having gone from Chyongju to Syen Chuen in a party of about 30 men; no men with any sense, bent upon such a plot as these men are alleged to have been implicated in, would have gone about their plans in such a conspicuous manner. In short, there was no conclusive evidence whatever against the accused, and

he contended that they were not liable for punishment of any sort whatever.

Mr. Tai Miung-sik spoke in much the same strain in defence of Lyu Tong-sol, whose social position alone, he said, was sufficient to demonstrate the improbability of his being connected with such a conspiracy. At the conclusion of counsel's speech the proceedings were adjourned.

### THE EIGHTEENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

#### SPEECH BY MR. TAKAHASHI.

SEOUL, Aug. 28.

The most interesting part of today's proceedings was the speech made by Mr. Takahashi, counsel for Chang Eung-chin, Chang Won-pyon, Yi Chong-sun, and four others. Counsel first reviewed the case generally, which he said had attracted more serious attention throughout the world than the attack upon the Tsarevich (the present Tsar) at Otsu some thirty years ago. Having traced the history of Japanese policy in Korea, and referred to the intrigues which used to be carried on in the Korean capital, counsel said that the Japanese idea was finally to put a stop to the plotting and unrest which resulted from the old administration, and proceeded:—

"But what of the feelings of the Koreans when they saw the Han dynasty, which had been in existence for about 500 years, overthrown by the annexation of the country by Japan? What must they have thought when they realised that this meant their disappearance as an independent nation? Let us be sympathetic with them; let us be generous enough to shed sympathetic tears when we think of their fate as a nation. I say we should do this when we think of the Koreans as individuals, and consider what their feelings must have been. But looking at the question from the purely Japanese standpoint, we must recognise that the annexation of the peninsula was most essential for preserving peace in the Far East. This was recognised by the Emperor of Korea himself, who accordingly consented to transfer his rights to the Emperor of Japan. In spite of this peaceful amalgamation of the two countries, it is only natural that the Koreans should have felt sad and depressed at the change brought about in their position, and that

some of them should have thought about schemes for restoring their lost independence. This position, however, the Japanese people do not seem able to understand; let me then try to show what the position really is.

#### CIVIL & MILITARY ADMINISTRATION.

"The Korean people are now Japanese subjects, and there is a certain class of people in Japan who urge that in governing the peninsula a combined policy of friendly Japonisation and of oppression should be adopted. This was particularly urged at the time Japan held Korea as a Protectorate. Now, what was the policy of Prince Ito as Resident-General? It was admitted by the Japanese that Ito tried to treat the Koreans on exactly the same footing as the Japanese. There were some people who alleged that he showed more partiality for his own countrymen, but I think there were large numbers of Koreans who held the opposite view. Prince Ito, as Resident-General, wore a sword. This sword was merely displayed as a badge of authority, as an indication of the force which could be exercised if occasion arose. Prince Ito's sword was quite a different weapon from that wielded by Count Terauchi; Prince Ito was a civil official, while Count Terauchi is a military man. It is therefore clear that the swords worn by these two men are very different weapons, for although there is no difference in the two weapons insofar as they represent Japan's authority in the administration of the peninsula, yet the Koreans themselves and the world in general realise that there is a difference."

#### A JUDICIAL WARNING.

At this point the Presiding Judge remarked:—"There is not much difference between the two swords, and it is quite sufficient that you should have mentioned that there is a difference." Counsel, however, took no notice of this judicial reminder—as it seemed to be—that he was treading on dangerous ground, and proceeded:—

"Count Terauchi is said to be carrying out his administrative policy by force and pressure. When he took over the charge of Korean affairs the police system was changed. The police and gendarmes alike were entrusted with judicial powers, and every Korean whose opinions were at all opposed to Japanese administration was unable to escape from surveil-

lance. This increased the sense of uneasiness existing among the Koreans, and, further, some of them were so overwhelmed with the idea of having lost their independence that they resolved to start a movement to reestablish their position. It was not only the Koreans in the peninsula who had these ideas. Their fellow-countrymen residing abroad had the same ideas, and there is no foreigner who has become friendly with the Korean people who does not share their bitter thoughts against Japan. If the official records in this case are to be credited, the well-known scholar Bishop Harris, a man of gentle disposition, has actually attended meetings of the conspirators in Seoul! If this be true, no one can tell where anti-Japanese sentiment may not be hidden. The very idea is itself startling. We are now given to understand that Japanese administration in the peninsula is changing for the better, and even those Koreans who used to hold anti-Japanese views are gradually becoming convinced of the benevolent motives of the Emperor of Japan. Systematic education is being welcomed by the Koreans and they are also starting industries and carrying them on by up-to-date methods. The difference between the swords of Prince Ito and Count Terauchi is now becoming only a memory, though it is evident that the sword of the Governor-General is mightier than that of the Resident-General was.

"Turning to a review of the general aspect of this case, I would like to recall the words of the Procurator, who said that the Koreans were a people who imitated others. He said that if the accused had been examined in open Court singly, as they were at the preliminary examination, instead of all together they would not have denied their former confessions. I agree with him on this point. The Procurator also said that the Koreans are a people with a fondness for show, and their defiant attitude in Court was merely with the object of making themselves out to be brave men. Here again I agree with the Procurator. But I am of opinion that if these men had been examined singly in open Court they would have admitted anything—even things much more serious than those they have already admitted. I further admit that the records of the examination of the accused were not made by the officials from a preconceived idea

of this case, but I think they must have been woven together by the authorities in order to make a connected story; I certainly do not believe that these confessions are verbatim reports of the statements actually made by the accused. I believe that some of them made statements which incriminated many others, but these statements were made as the result of certain circumstances which were irresistible.

#### UNRELIABLE CONFESSIONS.

"It is quite likely that among the accused there are men who at the time of the annexation greatly admired An Chung-keun, the assassin of Prince Ito. It is quite likely that some of them may have unthinkingly given vent to opinions which have led to the establishment of this present charge of premeditated assassination of Count Terauchi, but I contend that they have made statements which are untrue. The fact that Pak and Chang made statements to the effect that they took part in the plot, and yet were released, shows that even in the eyes of the Procurator their evidence was considered unreliable. Again, there are two police inspectors who are implicated by the confessions of the accused, but these two men were not arrested, and they are still in the service. The confessions of the accused may have been voluntary, but they are no more reliable than the statements of a dreamer.

"And now I come to another point. Are there, among the 123 Koreans accused in this case, any men inferior to An Chung-keun, the assassin of Prince Ito, and Yi Chai-myong, who made the attack upon the ex-Korean Premier? I ask the Court to take special note of this point. There is no doubt that every one of the men now in Court on this charge is of a superior character to these two men, who carried out their plans single-handed. Yet the Court is asked to believe that these 123 men, all of them superior to Yi and An, had not the courage to carry out the plan they are said to have formed, despite the fact that they were together in such large numbers. Here again I declare my opinion that the confessions of the accused in regard to the conspiracy may be authentic, but their statements are like those of men talking in their dream.

"Procurator Sakai has said that the fact that the New People's Society was an organisation for spreading anti-Japan-

ese ideas was evident from a perusal of the composition papers written by students at schools like the Taisong school, Pyongyang. In making such a statement as this, the Procurator shows how he looks at things through coloured spectacles. The topics for composition lessons are generally selected from all sorts of subjects, and in writing upon a subject connected with Japan, it is only natural that the students should have put down whatever impressions were in their minds at the time.

"The other barristers who have addressed the Court have dwelt upon the application of the law in this case, but I would urge that the present case can be decided by applying the ordinary rules of common sense. I should like to know if the Court thinks it necessary to apply the law to a case which is based upon nothing more substantial than a lot of talk such as is spoken in dreams. But even assuming that the charge is well founded, let us see how the case should be dealt with. When the annexation was declared, the peninsula came under the same laws as those observed in Japan Proper. Owing to the great difference between Japanese and Korean customs, however, a few Articles in the old Korean Code were preserved, although a new Korean Code had been promulgated. The punishment of criminals by whipping, for example, is retained. Now, I have had a conversation with the accused Chang Eung-chin in prison, and what he told me I think is worth mentioning now as proof of my contention that this case should be decided in accordance with the dictates of common sense. Chang said it was a fact that a certain class of Koreans had feelings of enmity towards Japan, and he believed that from Japan's point of view it was necessary to sweep all such Koreans out of existence in order to guarantee her administration of the peninsula. At the police headquarters, Chang went on to tell me, he was questioned about things of which he knew absolutely nothing. He made a statement knowing that it was untrue, but he thought that the time had come when Japan had decided to clear out all those Koreans who were suspected of having views opposed to Japan. He thought that the result would probably be that those who fell under the suspicion of the authorities would be banished to some remote islands. Now this



is the view of the situation which was taken by Chang,—a man who has had a Japanese education, who has such an excellent knowledge of the language that he can compose verses, and a man who thoroughly understands the general trend of the world's affairs. When this man was first examined he never thought that he would be put upon his trial on charge of premeditated but unconsummated murder. Later on he followed the words of the crazy Kim simply because he wanted to make up something big for the preliminary examination. Now, in such circumstances as these, can the old Code be applied in deciding the case against this man?

#### INTERESTING POLITICAL REMINISCENCES.

"When I was young I took an active part in political movements, particularly at the time when the struggle was going on between the Liberals and the Progressives. The official surveillance kept upon us young men who acted as canvassers was very strict. Among those who were with me was Mr. Kawakami (the late actor) and Mr. Fukui Mohei (a well-known member of Mr. Kawakami's company). We could not deliver strong political speeches, so these two and some others hit upon another idea for awakening the Japanese people from their slumbers. Mr. Kawakami appeared at the *yose*, where he sang a song which became very popular. The words were something like this:—While burning moxa on the eyes of a frog, ye do shout at the top of your voices "Do jump further on, if you can!" (Laughter in Court.) The allusion in this song was to the extreme and unnecessary strictness of the official surveillance which was kept upon political workers at this time. But merely being strict is not the whole secret of good administration, and a case such as that which is now before the Court can be decided by appealing solely to common sense, for the law need not be applied to a case which consists of nothing more than dream-talking. This case, however, has attracted great attention; a large number of foreigners have been present at every hearing, and even the famous Miller murder case at Yokohama did not attract so much attention as this has done. There is in my opinion no evidence to prove the guilt of the accused, and they should therefore be declared innocent."

#### MR. OKUBO'S SPEECH FOR THE DEFENCE.

In opening his speech to-day in defence of Lyu Tong-sol, Mr. Okubo said that although this case had been described by the Japanese authorities as a very grave one, and it had attracted a great deal of public attention, yet it struck him as being rather more of a comedy than anything else. The police, however, regarded it very seriously; they arrested 123 men and closely examined them. The official records of these examinations, however, were full of mistakes, but it was essential to know whether the confessions of the accused were based upon fact or not. Counsel proceeded:—

"Perusal of these records suggests that they are detailed confessions by the accused men of the facts of the case, but in open Court these same men declared that their statements were false, and that their statements had been wrung from them by torture. We barristers for the defence are not bound to believe these statements, nor do we hastily accept the allegations of torture, but we feel that there must be some particular reason for the men's withdrawal of their former statements.

"The accused have said that they were tortured, but they have not said how they were tortured, a fact which may have suggested to the Court that their statements were not to be believed. In regard to the evidence given by Kim Ichom, that he wished to assassinate a number of high officials in Seoul and Tokyo, and also wished to dispose of the President of the Hague Court, I cannot believe that his statement is true. He is merely a madman whose ravings are pure hyperbole, and his confession cannot be accepted as a statement of fact.

"The Procurator has said that he could not believe the allegations of torture, as a bodily examination of each of the accused had failed to show any signs of ill-treatment. But I have been told that the accused, when they were examined at the police headquarters, were taken into a nicely-furnished room, an arrangement which I suppose was meant to reassure the accused that they would not be ill-treated at the hands of the much-dreaded police. But this unusual treatment may have had the effect of inspiring further terror and fear of what might come later. I do not think that the accused were actually tortured,

but I do think that they had reasons for saying anything which they thought would satisfy their questioners in order to get out of the hands of the police as soon as possible. It is a very easy matter to make up records. One of the accused might have said by chance something which just happened to fit in with what the questioner had in mind. Based on the statement made by this individual, the police may have put further questions to others of the accused, and in this way the official records could be compiled. The record of Yi Chang-ho's statement says that he was not subjected to torture, yet he attempted to commit suicide. This, I take it, was due to his terror of what might happen to him, and others of the accused seem to have been seized with the same feelings of dread. The police regarded the confessions of the accused as being absolute evidence of their guilt, but they put too much reliance upon these statements, for they were made by the men simply with the object of getting out of the hands of the police as soon as possible. No doubt they had the idea of denying these statements when brought up for public trial, but their action has resulted in their being bound by their own words, as the Japanese proverb goes. Certainly they must have believed that their confessions were not the only evidence the authorities had against them.

"We see too from the records that the authorities produced two men whose houses it was alleged had been broken into with the object of burglary, and asked a number of the accused if they had broken into the houses of these two men, but they did not ask these men if they could identify the alleged burglars. To me this method of conducting an examination is most improper; the men whose houses it is said were burgled should have been examined. Again, Kim Ok-hyon and three others are quoted in the records as having said that they took a number of revolvers and buried them on a hill, but when the police went there and searched for the weapons, they could not find them, which shows that the accused merely invented the story. In regard to Baron Yun, for four days he denied the police allegations against him. Then it was suggested to him that it would be to his advantage if he confessed, and thinking that there was a possibility of his being released if he did so, he assented to all the questions which were put to him."

Having referred to the unreasonableness of the Procurator's story of the men having travelled about between Chyongju and Syen Chuen in large parties, and to the unreliable evidence given by Chang and Pak counsel proceeded:—

"It seems to me that this case has arisen out of an over-valuation by the police of the importance of the confessions of the accused, who on their side under-estimated the importance which was being attached to their statements. The allegation in this case is that these men are guilty of unconsummated assassination—that they went to certain railway stations in large numbers to execute a plot, but failed to carry out their plans. This fact alone seems to me to show that they had no intention of carrying out their alleged design. The Koreans are a people who have scarcely ever produced a patriot in the true sense of the word. Yi Chai-myong was not a patriot, but a vainglorious man, while Kim Il-chom is simply a madman. It is said that this plot was formed as part of the scheme for restoring the lost national independence, but bearing in mind the past history of the people, I very much doubt this. The alleged fact that these men proceeded to the railway station to kill the Governor-General, but made no attempt to do so, seems to me to show very clearly that they never had any definite idea of killing that official."

Counsel then went on to argue that even if the case as stated by the Procurator was established, the accused could not be punished since the crime had been suspended. It did not matter whether the suspension was voluntary or was due to preventive circumstances; all that the Court had to take into consideration was that the crime had been suspended. In regard to Yi Seung-hun, counsel said that he had produced several exhibits to prove that he had not gone down to Nap Chyengjong from Pyong-yang, and then proceeded to speak in defence of Lyn Tong-sol, whom he said was dragged into the case by the authorities. Having denied that the accused was connected with the conspiracy, and referred to the alibi which had been put in, counsel proceeded:—

#### A "CONSPIRATOR" AND COUNT TERAUCHI.

"Moreover, there is a reason why Lyn could not and would not take part in a conspiracy against Count Terauchi.

About 15 years ago Lyu went over to Japan with the object of studying in the Military Cadets' School. He first wanted to make his preparatory studies in the Seijo school. Lyu was one of seven Korean students who went over to Japan at their own expense to study; two others were to study military science at the expense of the Government. At this time it was the rule that foreigners could only enter the Japanese military colleges by arrangement between the foreign Government concerned and the Japanese authorities, and Lyu, not being a Government student, was not allowed to enter the preparatory school. Count Terauchi, learning the circumstances of the case, used his influence and got Lyu into the college. About nine years ago, when a new Korean Minister was sent to Tokyo, he tried to send back all the Korean students owing to the shortness of funds in the Korean exchequer. Lyu was also to be sent back, although he was not a Government student, but again Count Terauchi interceded on his behalf, and on behalf of the other students. The Count, who was at that time Minister of War, provided out of his own pocket all the expenses for the Korean students. Lyu subsequently passed from the preparatory school into the Cadets' School, and later on was attached to the Imperial Bodyguard. When the Russo-Japanese war broke out, Lyu was attached to the Japanese army, and fought for Japan at the head of a company of troops, and later on an Order of Merit was conferred upon him in recognition of his services in the field. Lyu also became acquainted through Count Terauchi with General Hasegawa, then in command of the Japanese forces in the peninsula. It will thus be seen that Lyu was under many obligations to Count Terauchi, whom he regards as his benefactor with the respect shown by a son to his father. Now, when Lyu went travelling through the country canvassing for support for a company which he was starting, and for which he had Count Terauchi's approval, Lyu's efforts to find supporters for his industrial scheme have been represented by the Procurator to have been efforts to get people to take part in a plot against the life of the man who had more than once proved his benefactor. It has been said that Lyu made some very strong speeches against Japan prior to the annexation, but that is all past and done with, and has nothing to

do with the present serious charge which has been brought against him. As a private individual Lyu is a man of good character, and if he wants to oppose Japan, he would have done so openly."

Counsel then went to deal with some general aspects of the case. He complained that when evidence was brought disproving the Procurator's statement that the accused men had gone down by train in large parties from Nap Chyongjong to Syen Chuen, the Procurator took refuge in the plea that the men must have gone down in small parties on foot. It was alleged that it was at Nap Chyongjong where some of the accused had committed burglaries to obtain funds for the conspiracy, but counsel doubted the authenticity of the records, and suspected that the conspiracy case had been built up by the authorities on these charges of mere burglary. But even if the charge was fully substantiated, there was the question of punishment to be considered. The annexation had been effected without a single drop of blood being shed, a fact almost unprecedented in history, and even such an affair as the present case was alleged to be must be considered a cheap price to pay. If the authorities became too nervous over the matter, it was out of the question to expect any brilliant example of administrative policy in the new territory. After all, any attempt on the part of the Koreans to resist Japanese authority would be like pelted a rock with an egg, and counsel therefore urged that the Court should treat the accused with magnanimity and generosity. All the accused were men of refinement, and it would be a terrible thing for them to be branded for the rest of their lives as ex-convicts, and it would certainly not be the way to treat the men whose influence is depended upon so much for improving the existing conditions in the peninsula. Counsel proceeded:—

#### THE POSITION OF THE FOREIGN MISSIONARIES.

"The end of Korea's existence as an independent country was hastened by the Koreans themselves when they decided to appeal to the Hague Tribunal. If the allegations against the foreign missionaries which have been mentioned in this case should unfortunately prove well-founded, it might be found that they were connected only so far as urging the Koreans to make this appeal. According to the records, however, it seems

that the missionaries actually instigated the conspirators, and did not merely suggest various steps with the object of gaining their goodwill. If the foreigners are really implicated to this extent, why have not the authorities taken proceedings against the missionaries? It seems to me that the whole of this case has been wrongly managed; the principal points have been pushed into the background, while the minor details have been kept to the front. It is probable that the result of this case will be that the Korean people will form the impression that because the United States is stronger than Japan, the Japanese authorities do not dare to take action against the American missionaries even if they actually admitted their connection with the affair. If the Korean people do get this idea, they may be led to further action. It is necessary, if the authorities believe that there is a conspiracy, to go to the very root of the matter, and if it is decided to punish the accused for their part in the affair as shown by the records, then it is only proper that the missionaries—who from the same records are shown to have actually instigated and assisted the plot—should also be punished severely." Counsel concluded his speech by remarking that the protest by the barristers for the defence and their demand for the case to be reheard before other Judges had been dismissed, but he did not think it necessary now to go into the question of the Court's alleged partiality; personally, he believed that the Court was impartial.

#### WHY DID THE ACCUSED MEN MAKE CONFESSIONS ?

The next counsel to address the Court was Mr. Tak Shung pin, who made an able speech in Japanese. Counsel said that though it was not an uncommon thing for prisoners to deny their former confessions, yet it was remarkable that 122 men out of 127 should have withdrawn their former statements. Two other men, Pak and Chang, had also confessed, but their statements being found to be false, they were discharged, but the authorities had never explained in what circumstances these men had made statements incriminating themselves. The Procurator said that the other prisoners' denials in open Court were due to their obstinacy. Counsel said that he saw the assassin of Prince Ito when he was

being tried, and he also saw the trial of the man who made an attack upon the ex-Korean Premier; these men were arrogant in their demeanour and apparently indifferent as to their fate, but the men accused in the present case were all respectful and behaved quite properly, with the exception of Kim Il-chom. Counsel went on trace the growth of anti-Japanese feeling in Korea and the reason therefor, and said that it was only natural for people to try to carry out plans which they considered would benefit their country. Some Koreans were anxious to do something to re-establish the independence of their country, and this was quite a natural ambition.

Proceeding to the case against Baron Yun, counsel said that the Baron had the advantage of a foreign education, and he returned to Korea when that country was experiencing dark days. Formerly a dependency of China, Korea—after the Sino-Japanese war—began to be independent in name and in fact. Then, about two years later, the country came under Russian influence, and Baron Yun was one of the leading anti-Russian leaders. When Russia appointed 40 of her officials as Korean Government advisers, Baron Yun protested strongly. Counsel said he referred to these matters to show that anti-Japanese movements, like anti-Russian movements, are the product of the times, and are unavoidable. After the Russo-Japanese war Korea became a dependency of Japan, and this led to the expression of feelings of enmity towards Japan by some Koreans, but this was not to be taken as marking an active policy of opposition. Baron Yun had himself said in Court that though he remonstrated at the annexation of his country by Japan, he realised that there was no help for it. It was not reasonable to expect Baron Yun to be as faithful to Japan after the annexation as he was to Korea before the change, and counsel urged that on this ground, if on no other, the Court should show a generous attitude in dealing with the Baron and the other accused.

#### THE QUESTION OF TORTURE.

The next counsel for the defence was Mr. Chang Dow, who first dealt with the question of the confessions. He said:—

"The Chief Procurator, I understand, has said that the accused all confessed

to the facts of this conspiracy when at the police headquarters and at the Procurator's Office, intending to withdraw them later in open Court. Now, I may say that even the Koreans do not think it right to say one thing in one place, and something else in another. I understand that the examination of the accused at the police headquarters was attended by Major-General Akashi, the Chief of Police, and Commander of the Gendarmerie in Korea, and by Police Inspectors Kunitomo and Watanabe. From the fact that most of the accused have complained of the torture to which they were subjected, we must assume that their charges are not mere fabrications, and I think that some sort of torture must have been resorted to by the police when they examined these men. Nineteen days after his arrest Baron Yun denied the charges made against him, but on the twentieth day, when he was told by his examiners that they were about to bring in some instruments of torture, the Baron concluded—so I am told—that he had been dragged into the case by other men, and he feared that he might be forced to say something more incriminating while under the pain of torture, so he admitted the statements which are set forth in the records. I believe that torture was resorted to to some extent in examining the accused men, but owing to the Baron's social position it may be that this was not resorted to in his case."

Counsel then briefly referred to the evidence of Kim Il-chom, which he said could not be believed, as it was too absurd and unconvincing. In reply to the Procurator's statement that the total membership of the New People's Society was about 1,200,000, counsel said that the Koreans as a nation rather despised the creed of Bushido, and it was extremely doubtful if there was a murderous party among them of such enormous dimensions. Counsel then proceeded to deal with the charges contained in the records against the missionaries.

#### THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE "CONSPIRATORS" AND THE MISSIONARIES.

"The relations which are said to have existed between the accused and the foreign missionaries is to me one of the most unsatisfactory points in connection with this case. Of the foreigners who have been mentioned, Mr. McCune is the prime mover. It is this man—according

to the records—who distributed revolvers among the accused and who addressed meetings of conspirators at the Taikenk book-store. If this was so, Mr. McCune should be already standing among the accused. It is impossible that one fact stated in the records can be true and another false. This case has been brought up for public trial solely upon the strength of evidence given by one man against another, yet this same evidence has not been accepted where it applies to the foreign missionaries. I cannot understand how it is that if the authorities accept the statements of the accused made against each other, why they should allow the missionaries to escape the clutches of the law. But I do understand that this case is an extremely grave one, on the result of which depends the good name of the Japanese Court."

Counsel then went on to argue that it was impossible that men like Baron Yun, Yi Chi-keung, and O Heui-won could be connected with any such plot as that which was said to exist. Yi was a man of splendid personal character, and although there were several records supposed to be confessions made by him, counsel contended that the confessions must have been made in "some unavoidable circumstances." O Heui-won, a man extremely wealthy and advanced in age, was not likely to get mixed up in any such scheme as alleged, and counsel argued that if there had been any idea of assassinating the Governor-General, two or three men at the most would have been sufficient to carry out the plot, instead of over a hundred men marching down to the railway stations day after day. Counsel proceeded:—

#### WHY THE STUDENTS WENT TO THE RAILWAY STATION.

"A Korean can understand the Korean national mind better than any other man. Now, in my opinion, if a teacher of a school told his pupils that they were to take revolvers and go down to a railway station and murder someone, it is certain that those students would never go near that school again. No! There cannot be one such a fool as to go back to a school conducted by such a dangerous teacher. As to the statement about these students carrying revolvers when they went down to Syen Chnen station to meet Count Terauchi, let me point out that the school was asked to send the students down to

receive the Governor-General. If the authorities had not acceded to this request, the school would be regarded as being opposed to the authorities, and so the students were obliged to go down to the station, led by Sin Hyo-pyom, the gymnastic instructor. Both the teachers and students were closely searched on being admitted to the platform, but no one was found to carry a revolver. The allegation that these men and students went to the station all armed is based on the false confessions of the men concerned. In short, the story of the whole conspiracy seems to me to have been founded upon the statements of one or two men which have reached the ears of the police, and has gradually assumed its present proportions and become a grave event. The Koreans are a happy-go-lucky people, and cannot be regarded as a dangerous nation.

Now, in regard to the argument that this case should be dealt with as a suspended offence. About six years ago there was a case heard in Seoul in which a man was charged with incendiarism. He set fire to a neighbour's house, but almost immediately repented, and set to work to extinguish the flames, which he did before any serious damage was done. The Court decided that this was a suspended offence. Again, in 1895, soon after the Five Article Treaty was signed, a number of young Koreans formed a scheme for assassinating certain Ministers of State, but the plot was detected just in time. Korea was then going through a period when force and pressure were being resorted to, and Article 86 of the old Korean Code was applied to the case. The result of this trial, in which I was concerned as Public Prosecutor, was that the men were sentenced to imprisonment for terms ranging from one to two years. In the present case, if the accused are found guilty, they cannot be sentenced to less than five years' imprisonment if the Article mentioned by the Procurator is applied to the case. Now, considering that at a time when the Korean people were subjected to force and pressure the men I have just mentioned were sentenced to terms far less than five years, is it not too severe to think of punishing men whose crime is not substantiated to terms of imprisonment of far more than five years? The confessions of the accused cannot be accepted, especially those affecting the students. Even the labourers from Japan Proper do not regard the Koreans as being men of

their own level, nor do foreigners regard the people as being the same as their own countrymen. It is improbable, even from this point alone, that the foreign missionaries in the peninsula would have instigated the youths whom they were bringing up to assassinate the great representative of Japan in Korea. In conclusion, let me urge the Court to show all possible lenience to the men accused of taking part in this affair."

## STATEMENTS BY THE ACCUSED.

### COMPLAINTS OF TORTURE.

On the conclusion of Mr. Tak Sung-pin's speech, four of the accused who were undefended were allowed to speak for themselves. All of them complained of torture, and one of them—Soh Heui-poong—said that he was "teased"—as the Court interpreter put it—for four days in succession at the police headquarters. Accused said:—"I was told by one of the officials that one man had been killed as a result of torture, and I was threatened that if I did not stick to the statements I had made, I should meet the same fate."

Yi Keui-tang, who during his public examination was reported to have said that he had not been tortured, but that he confessed to the facts recorded because he felt bad in the head, next rose to address the Court. Permission being given, Yi started upon a voluble statement but was shortly pulled up by the Judge, who said:—"Here, Yi, I remember you; you have got a wrong head, and I think it is better that you speak as shortly as possible." Accused replied:—"I must say what I think, as I feel great resentment at my treatment by the police." To this the Judge retorted:—"Did you not say before that you were not tortured? You cannot retract your own words! Stop addressing the Court! It is rather too late for that now." Yi, however, pleaded to be allowed to finish his remarks, and eventually the Court allowed him to proceed. He said:—

"I wish to say a few words about the remark of the Procurator who said that I tacitly admitted that my alleged confession was correct. I cannot understand how the Procurator got that idea. I never said that I was not tortured, but that I was not badly tortured. I can give the Court my reasons for this. When I was brought to Seoul from New Wiju I was left in the custody of the gendarmerie. At the police headquarters I was given rice mixed with malt for my food. Why

I was given such bad food I do not know. I denied all knowledge of the plot, but after spending three days in prison living on this wretched food my head was badly affected, and I decided to get out of my position by saying what I thought would please the authorities. It was in this way that my confession was obtained."

With the close of Yi's statement, the Court adjourned.

## THE NINETEENTH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### CONCLUSION OF THE TRIAL.

SEOUL, Aug. 29.

The revolver, pistol, pocket electric lamps, the couple of swords, and other similar exhibits, which for some days had not been in Court, were on view again to-day together with the two boxes in which it is alleged revolvers were originally kept. As Dr. Uzawa, the Tokyo barrister, had not completed his investigation into the circumstances of the case, he was not ready to make his speech for the defence, so the Court allowed some of the accused who were not represented to make statements on their own behalf.

The first man to speak was Paik Yong-sok, a teacher, who denied that he or his school were in any way connected with the New People's Society. He complained that as a result of the Court refusing to allow him to produce certain documents from his school, he had been unable to prove his innocence. He proceeded:—"It is very strange that Chang and Pak have both been acquitted of this charge on the strength of the dirty evidence that they were in custody for another offence, while my application for the production of clean evidence—the examination of a teacher as a witness and the production of certain documents from the school—is rejected. The authorities seem to think that North Pyongan-do is the headquarters of the New People's Society, but this is wrong; the people in this province are very much afraid of the Government officials, and it is impossible that they should even attempt to take such action as has been alleged. I only ask the Court to give me the same generous treatment as was extended to Chang and Pak."

The next prisoner, Pak Chion-hyong, protested against the dismissal of his application for evidence to be called in his

defence. He said he had been a Christian for ten years, and would not think of killing anyone. The present case, he thought, must have been based upon the statements of certain foolish men. At the same time, he realised that no protestations of innocence on his part would be accepted by the Court, so he would not make any. He merely expressed the hope that the Court would deal with him as leniently as possible, as the lives of his family of six persons depended upon him.

Im Chi-chyong referred to the fact that the New People's Society was formed in Hawaii about nine years ago with the object of encouraging Koreans to emigrate to the islands. A similar Society was formed in San Francisco, long before the change in the relations between Japan and Korea, so that it was wrong to say that the Society was formed to assassinate high officials. Accused went on to refer to the evidence given by Chang and Pak, and said that the decision of such a case should not rest entirely upon the evidence of witnesses. He mentioned the case of a Korean policeman who some years ago was sentenced to death for the murder of a man on the strength of evidence given by witnesses. Later on the man who was believed to have been murdered re-appeared, and the policeman was released. Accused concluded his speech by expressing his regret at being in such a position while he was an innocent man.

### THE PERSECUTION OF YANG KITAK.

Yang Ki-tak, regarded as one of the ringleaders, and who is serving a sentence in connection with another political "offence," was the next to speak. He said that it was quite evident, from the statements which had been made by the accused in open Court, that they had been tortured in order to get their confessions. "As for myself," he went on, "I was dragged into this affair by the evidence given by Baron Yun, but as it has been shown by the exhibits produced that Baron Yun was in Kaisong on the days I am alleged to have discussed the conspiracy with him in Seoul, I should be acquitted of this charge. I was examined twice in connection with the charge against the assassin of Prince Ito, and twice in connection with the case against the man who made an attack upon Count Yi, but in each case I was acquitted. I am not very much concerned as to what happens to me now, but I do protest against

being punished on a charge of which I am innocent."

Ok Kwan-pin said that he, too, was one of those who had been dragged into the case by other people. The confession of the man Kim was utterly unreliable, as he was a madman. Accused went on to complain that the red convict garb which he now wore was the result of another man's evidence given against him in connection with a charge of violation of the Peace Preservation Law. Now he had to face another charge in similar circumstances, but he could do nothing more than plead his innocence.

## LAST DAY'S PROCEEDINGS.

### DR. UZAWA'S SPEECH.

To-day the long-expected speech by Dr. Uzawa was made. The celebrated Tokyo barrister was defending Kil Chin-hyong and some twenty others directly, while he defended all the accused indirectly. Dr. Uzawa spoke for about three hours, and a report of his speech would fill many columns of this paper. The speech, however, contained references to many points which had been dealt with by one or other of the counsel who had already spoken for the defence, and these parts of Dr. Uzawa's speech it is unnecessary to refer to at any length. His address, like those of most of the other counsel, may not seem to be as vigorous as might be expected, but in reading the reports of all these addresses it must be remembered that Japanese legal etiquette is peculiar. For example, the Public Procurator having flatly denied that torture was resorted to by the authorities in conducting the examination of the accused, counsel are apparently compelled to accept that denial, and generally are not disposed to take up an attitude strongly opposed to that taken by the Procurator. Whether this is due altogether to legal etiquette, or to counsel's disinclination to appear as sympathisers with a "grave conspiracy" is more than your correspondent can say. Below will be found a summary of Dr. Uzawa's address which gives an idea of the line of argument followed:—

"This case has attracted more attention, and is being more closely followed abroad than in Japan. There is however some misunderstanding on the part of some foreigners in connection with this case, due either to their ignorance of Japanese legal procedure, or to the great

difference between Japanese practice and that followed in the countries of which these foreigners are nationals. In dealing with this case, there are two points to which I shall pay special attention. One of these points is the question of torture. Now the use of torture is not to be thought of in connection with the present administration, and as the Procurator himself has assured us that torture was not resorted to, I am forced to accept his statement and to avoid raising this point. But I should like to call the attention of the Procurator to this fact—that most of the accused whom I am to defend, not to speak of many of the others, are Christian converts of from 5 to 20 years' standing, some of whom are teachers and elders. Their favourite studies are chemistry, astronomy, algebra, mathematics, geography, and such things,—all sciences which have no connection whatever with politics. I have been told that Count Otani, the Abbot of the Nishi Hongwanji in Kyoto, devotes much of his time to the study of astronomy and mathematics, particularly because these sciences are based upon fact and demonstrable truth. Now I find it impossible to understand how men who are converts to a religion, and who find pleasure in such studies as I have mentioned, find themselves accused of the serious charge which has been made against these men.

"This case has been dealt with in two different ways. The official records upon which the examination of the accused in open Court was based were prepared before the new Korean Criminal Code was compiled and promulgated, so that we find these records, prepared under the old Law, are now being dealt with under the new Law. I have read these records, and I think those who are not acquainted with Japanese law may feel somewhat dubious as to the real nature of the case after perusing these records. It is quite natural, too, that outsiders should have the opinion that the Court was wrong in not granting the applications which were made for calling witnesses. Anyhow, the statements contained in the official records were denied by the accused, and the essential point to be decided is whether those confessions were true or not. That mere confessions by accused persons are not necessarily true may be seen from the so-called *yaki-uchi* affair (when the police-boxes in Tokyo were attacked by the mob and set on fire as a mark of popular dis-



approval of the conclusion of peace between Japan and Russia). A great number of people were arrested, and from the confession of one of the accused named Yoshizawa it seemed evident that all the men arrested were actually guilty of the charge which was brought against them. Further investigation, however, disclosed the fact that this man's confession was false, and the men whom he had implicated in the affair were released. The present conspiracy case seems to be based upon the evidence of certain men who made statements incriminating others, not caring whether such statements were founded on fact or not. The mere fact that the accused are members of the New People's Society—the object of which is alleged to be the killing of high officials—must not be the sole test of their guilt. Their individual characters and social standing must also be taken into consideration.

"In examining the records I found that the feelings of the accused in regard to the annexation of their country were very different. Some were represented to have been greatly upset; others were not particularly interested, and others again had no feelings at all about the matter. There may have been some men, ignorant of the trend of world politics, who went so far as to start making plans for restoring the lost independence of their country, but none of the men whom I am now appearing for were responsible for such an action. Kwak Tai-chong, on whose behalf I am appearing, is described in the records as having joined the New People's Society knowing that the object of that Society was to restore the independence of Korea. Now, this is not the statement of Kwak himself, but is based upon the statements of others. Kwak is a man of education, and a religious man, and he and others have been praying for a good administration of Korea, and had not the least idea of joining a conspiracy against the new administrators.

"They were men who were absolutely resolved to observe the Ten Commandments, and moreover they expressed feelings of deep regret at hearing of the murder of Prince Ito. In saying this I may lay myself open to the charge of having unhesitatingly placed full credence in the statements of the prisoners, but I wish to say that their words have impressed me as being absolutely sincere, and coming straight from the

heart. These men for whom I speak have been converted to Christianity for a period of from five to twenty years, while their professions were those of teachers, pastors etc. None of them were acquainted with political affairs, and therefore they were not the sort of men likely to become accomplices in a conspiracy such as is alleged. What probably happened was that they were recklessly named by some one of the men who were first examined in connection with the affair, just in the same way that innocent men were implicated in the *yakiuchi* affair to which I have already referred.

#### THE OFFICIAL ATTITUDE TOWARDS CHRISTIANITY.

"There is still another important question to consider,—that is, the rumour which has been afloat that this case shows the intention of the authorities to drive Christianity out of Korea. Whether this allegation has any justification or not may be discussed when judgement in this case has been delivered. Meanwhile, I should like to mention the words of a foreign writer, Signor Luzzati, an Italian statesman and a celebrated scholar, who in his work "Confessions of Conscience and Knowledge" says that Japan, by an order of the Dajo Kwan (the former Privy Council), recognised the liberty of religious and political opinion in 1875, and later on guaranteed that same freedom in the Constitution. This freedom of speech and opinion exists even in Japan's new territory, and it is quite clear that no change has taken place in this connection in the administration. The accused for whom I speak are Christians working for the cause of their Saviour. They believed that the annexation of Korea was the will of God. It has been said by some of the accused, according to the records, that Christianity tends to destroy one's national feelings and loyalty, and that these men were merely nominally converted. There may be such men, of course, but the decision of this case should distinguish the true believers from the unfaithful converts, though in doing so I hope the Court will not depend to any great extent upon the so-called confessions."

Dr. Uzawa then went on to review the case as against each one of the accused for whom he was appearing, and said that they were in no way con-

ected with the alleged conspiracy, and protested that they had been dragged to the affair on the unsupported statement of a certain man. Counsel also went on to deal with the application of the law to this case, and said that if the testimony in the records could be accepted they would certainly be guilty of premeditated but unconsummated murder, but the Court must remember that all these statements in the records were dictated by the accused. Counsel said that in his opinion the reason the plot was not carried out was not because of the strict guard which was kept of the Governor-General, but because the men had never decided to execute such a plot; therefore the Article mentioned by the Procurator as applying to this case did not apply. Dr. Uzawa concluded his speech by pointing out that even if the accused were guilty, the terms of imprisonment suggested by the Procurator were too long, and he prayed that the Court would give an impartial judgement.

Mr. Sakai, the Associate Procurator, made a short speech dealing with the arguments put forward by counsel, which he said could not be accepted.

#### MORE ALLEGATIONS OF TORTURE.

An Tai-kuk then addressed the Court in his own defence. He declared that he was innocent of the charge, and that he was also innocent of the charge for which he had been previously sentenced and was now wearing the convict garb. He denied being connected with the scheme for settling Koreans at Chientao and working to bring about the independence of Korea, but he was obliged by the officials to confess that he was connected with the scheme, as they told him that Yang Ki-tak had already admitted the fact.

Yi Chai-yun, who next spoke, declared that he was kept under torture for a month. A man named Kim died as a result of the torture to which he had been subjected, while another man had one of his arms broken. Accused said he was threatened by the Procurator, during the preliminary examination, that he would be sent back to the police headquarters if he did not confess. Prisoner added that it was because Pak and Chang had been tortured that they made the false confessions about which so much had been heard. In conclusion, accused complained that the foreigners

who were alleged to be the principal figures in the affair had escaped the clutches of the law, while he and his fellows, who were comparatively subordinates, according to the prosecution, were in their present position.

Choi Syongmin, the next man to speak in his own defence, burst into tears when he rose to address the Court. He protested his innocence, and declared that he was hung up at the police headquarters and beaten. He proceeded:—"One of the officers told me that one man had died as a result of the torture to which he had been put. I then asked what it was they wanted me to say, whereupon they put the same questions to me as had been put to the other men, asking me if I did not do this and that. I simply replied 'yes, yes' under the torture. In the Procurator's office I was given tobacco to smoke, and was told that if I repeated what I had said at the police headquarters I should be released. Now I find myself in Court, and recommended by the Procurator to imprisonment for six years. I have been cheated by the authorities, and demand to be released."

Choi Che-kin also began to weep bitterly when he stood up in his place to address the Court. He spoke at considerable length, but the interpreter's version of his remarks was very short, and was to the following effect:—

"I was hung up by my hands and subjected to rough treatment. I was given a cup of water, which I thought was the cup of death (meaning a drink given to a dying man). I thought I was going to die. I was told that one day I should be released, and taken to where the revolvers were supposed to have been buried, but nothing ever came of this, because my story about the buried revolvers was a mere fabrication. I have been kept in custody all the time, although I was told I would be released, and I have thus been cheated by the authorities. I demand to be released."

#### PRISONER'S OFFER TO SHOW MARKS OF TORTURE.

The next man, Kim Syong-haing, said:—"I was bound up for about a month, and subjected to torture. I have still marks of it upon my body." The accused asked permission to show the marks, but the Court sternly refused to allow this to be done.

Cha Heui-syon next rose and also contradicted the Procurator's statement that none of the accused had any marks of torture upon their bodies. Accused said that he had marks of torture upon his body now, and repeated the statement that a man named Kim had died under torture.

#### THE CRAZY "CONSPIRATOR."

After three or four other men had complained about the torture to which they were subjected, Kim Il-chom rose to make a statement. His first remarks evidently puzzled the Court interpreter, and the Judge remarked that he (accused) need not trouble about going on with any crazy talk. Eventually the interpreter rendered Kim's remarks to this effect:—

"The prevailing principle of the Japanese administration in Korea is the as-

similation of the Korean people by the Japanese. The speeches which have been made by the Procurator are like so many lessons for us on morality. If conditions in the country are as stated by the officials, none of the 20 million people in Korea can be innocent of premeditated but unconsummated murder, and they are thus liable to imprisonment. It would be an unhappy thing for them if they were all acquitted of the charge."

With this extraordinary rhodomontade from a crazy man, the only one out of the 123 accused of the crime who has admitted in open Court that he was connected with the alleged conspiracy, the public hearing of this extraordinary case came to an end, and the Presiding Judge announced that judgement would be reserved.

## JUDGEMENT AND SENTENCES.

SEOUL, Sept. 28.

The trial of the 123 men charged with conspiracy and with a plot to assassinate Count Terauchi, the Governor-General of Korea, came to an end to-day with the conviction of the accused and the passing of heavy sentences upon the great majority of the prisoners.

In the course of an elaborate judgement the Court reviewed the case at great length, but ignored the complaints of torture and made no mention of the missionaries.\* The sentences were as follows:—

#### TEN YEARS PENAL SERVITUDE:—

Yun Chi-ho, Yang Ki-tak, Im Chi-chung, Yi Seung-hun, An Tal-kuk, Lyu Tong-sol.

#### SEVEN YEARS PENAL SERVITUDE:—

Ok Kwan-pin, Chang Eung-chin, Chai Li-sik, La Il-pong, Pyen Ik-syo, Choi Chun-hang, Yang Chom-miung, Kim Il-chom, Syong Oo-hyok, Kwok Tai-chong, Choi Tok-yun, Yi Yong-wha, Kim Eung-nok, Choi Syong-chu, Hong Song-in, O Heui-won, Yi Keui-tang, Song Cha-hyong.

#### SIX YEARS PENAL SERVITUDE:—

Yi Tok-whan, Yi Choon-ha, Kim Tong-won, Kim Tu-wha, Yun Syong-un, Chyong Ik-no, An Kyong-nok, Sin Sang-ho, Sin Hyo-pyom, Chang Si-ook, Hong Song-ik, Cha Kiun-sul, Yi Yong-hyok, Kang Keui-chan, Yang Chon-paik, Yi Pyongche, No Hyo-ook, Kim Chang-whan, No Chung-heun, An Chun, Chyon

[\* At the time of printing, no copy of the text of judgement is available.]

Hiun-chik, Kim Ik-kyom, Yi Chang-sik, Yi Tai-kyong, Chai Chu-sik, Kim Chan-o, Cho Tok-chan, Yi Myong-yong, Im Do-myong, Paik Mong-kiu, Yi Keun-taik, O Hak-su, Chi Sang-chu, Kim Si-cham, Chang Won-pyom, Lyu Hak-rium, Chang Kwan-sun, Kim Choon-keun, Paik Yong-sok.

FIVE YEARS PENAL SERVITUDE:—

O Tai-yung, Ok Song-pin, Kim Eung-cho, Yun Won-sam, Soh Heui-poong, An Sei-whan, Chong Chu-hiun, Yang Chun-hoi, Son Chong-ook, Chong Tok-yun, Yi Yong-wha, Kim Hyon-sik, Cha Heui-syon, Yi Chong-sun, La Pong-kyu, Paik H-chin, Hong Kyu-mun, Cha Yung-chun, Kil Chin-hyong, Cho Yung-chun, Kang Pong-oo, Paik Nam-chun, O Taik-eui, Pyen-Kong-yul, La Seung-kiu, An Syong-che, Kim Syong-haing, Kim Yong-wha, Choi Che-kiu, Choi Syong-min, Yi Chai-yun, Yi Chi-won, Pak Sang-hun, Im Pyong-haing, Pak, Chon-hyong, Yi Pyong-che, Kim Pong-su, Kim Yong-o, La Eui-su, Kim Eung-pong, An Kwong-ho.

DISCHARGED:—

Yi Chang-suk, Kim Chang-whan, Yi Kiu-yop, Yi Sun-ku, Kim Sun-do, Choi Syo-chan, Kim Song-pong, Kim Tai-hyon, Paik Mong-yong, Yi Chai-heut, Kim Yong-syong, Syon Oo-hun, Kim Soon-do, Yi Chai-yun, Tak Chang-ho, Yi Cha-yong, Kim Ok-hyon.



**PUBLISHED ANNUALLY.**

## **"Chronicle" Directory**

OF

Kobe, Osaka, Kyoto, Shimonoseki,  
Nagasaki, Korea, Dairen, and  
Formosa.

CONTAINING

Names of Foreign Consuls, Business  
Firms, Missionaries, etc.

Price ..... ¥3.00

Postage ..... 0.12

## **Japanese Customs Tariff.**

Price ..... ¥1.50

Postage ..... 0.08

## **The Bethell Trial.**

Report of Court Proceedings against  
Mr. E. T. Bethell.

Price ..... 50 sen

Postage ..... 6 sen

Prof. Chamberlain's

## **The Invention of a New Religion.**

THE HISTORY OF MIKADO-  
WORSHIP.

Price ..... 15 sen

Postage ..... 4 sen

**"JAPAN CHRONICLE,"**

KOBE, JAPAN.

大正元年十月二十五日  
大正元年十月二十九日

印刷  
發行

著發行  
者兼

印刷者

印刷所

神戸市山本通二丁目十七番

デ、ゼー、エバンス

兵庫縣武庫郡須磨町内西須磨村  
五十三番ノ十五

尾崎岩吉

兵庫縣神戸市浪花町六十五番

シヤパンクロニクル社

THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE -  
STAMP

TE

**LIBRARY USE**  
RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED

**LOAN DEPT.**

THIS BOOK IS DUE BEFORE CLOSING TIME  
ON LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW

RECEIVED JAN 1 1942

**CHRONICLE**

of current

articles on  
ure.

contains

general

dy, and

general

pecially

road in-

LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA  
BERKELEY

General Library  
University of California  
Berkeley

**ANNUAL SUBSCRIPTION - - ¥10 (\$5 Gold.)**

*Postage to Europe and America ¥3 (\$1.50) extra.*

Specimen Copy on Application to  
The Manager, "JAPAN CHRONICLE," KOBE, JAPAN.

YD 10760

265456

T

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

